

THE
WARREN, LITTLE, LOTHROP,
PARK, DIX, WHITMAN,
FAIRCHILD, PLATT, WHEELER,
LANE AND AVERY
PEDIGREES
OF
SAMUEL PUTNAM AVERY
1847-1920



The New York Genealogical and Biographical Society

MCMXXV

Presentation Volume

7

IN accordance with the personally arranged plans and expressed wishes of the author, the late Samuel Putnam¹² Avery (1847-1920), this volume is, in his name and at the request of his nieces the Misses Welcher of No. 61 Woodland Street, Hartford, Conn., and by the hands of the publishers, the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, presented to

Western Reserve Hist. Society,
10700 Euclid Avenue,
Cleveland, Ohio.

THE volume itself is, properly speaking, an addendum to and amplificative of "The Avery, Fairchild and Park Families," of which Mr. Avery was likewise the author; which work he presented to the public and gratuitously distributed in 1919.

IT has been the endeavor of the publishers to send a copy of this volume to all those individuals, libraries and societies that were the recipients of the first volume at the hands of Mr. Avery himself; and this Society would appreciate a prompt acknowledgment of the receipt of the work from those to whom it is sent, in order that an assurance may be had that its obligations and labor of love have been properly fulfilled and accomplished to the Society's satisfaction, to that of Executors of Mr. Avery's estate and especially in such manner that would have met with the author's full approval.

Please send acknowledgments to

The New York Genealogical and Biographical Society,
226 West 58th Street,
New York City, N. Y.



Sam P. Avery

1847-1920

MR. RICHARD WARREN

1620

and

OTHER ANCESTORS

Thomas Little, 1630

Thomas Fairchild, 1638

John Lothrop, 1634

Richard Platt, 1638

Richard Park, 1635

Moses Wheeler, 1641

Edward Dix, 1635

Job Lane, 1643

John Whitman, 1638

William Avery, 1650

OF

SAMUEL PUTNAM AVERY

1847-1920

A people which takes no pride in the noble achievements of remote ancestors, will never achieve anything worthy to be remembered with pride by remote descendants.

MACAULAY: *History of England*

TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
List of Illustrations	x
Poem by J. S. A. Carter	xi
Introduction by John Reynolds Totten	xiii
Authorities cited	I
The Pilgrim Fathers	3
The Mayflower Compact	9

THE WARREN FAMILY

Genealogies:—

1 Warren, Richard, Plymouth, Mass., 1620	15
2 Warren, Ann, daughter, born 1612	21

THE LITTLE FAMILY

Genealogies:—

1 Little, Thomas, Plymouth, Mass., 1630	25
Little, Ann Warren, wife, married April 19, 1633	25
2 Little, Ephraim, son, born 1650	27
Little, Mary Sturtevant, wife, married 1672	27
3 Little, Ruth, daughter, born 1686	29
6 Avery, John, born 1685-6	30
Avery, Ruth Little, wife, married 1710	30
Pedigree connection with Richard ¹ Warren, 1620, and Thomas ¹ Little, 1630	30

THE LOTHROP FAMILY

Authorities cited	35
Brief history of the parish of Lowthorpe, East Riding of York . .	37
Genealogies:—	
1 Lowthorpe, Robert, will proved 1539	42
2 Lowthorp, Christopher, born about 1530	42
3 Lowthorp, Marmaduke, buried 1609-10	42
4 Lowthorp, Francis, baptized 1603	43
4 Lowthorp, Christopher, baptized 1605	43
4 Lowthorp, Robert, baptized 1609	43

	PAGE
Staffordshire Lathropp	43
1 Lathropp, Michael, died before 1560	43
2 Lathropp, John	44
3 Lathropp, Thomas, will dated 1614	44
4 Lathropp, Nicholas, born 1582	44
5 Lathropp, Samuel	44
Three other pedigrees of Michael Lathropp	45, 46, 47
The Lothrop Family of Scituate and Barnstable	49
1 Lowthroppe, John, 1634	51
2 Lowthroppe, Robert, died 1558	52
3 Lowthroppe, Thomas, died 1606	54
4 Lowthrop, John, baptized 1584	70
5 Lothrop, Samuel, born in England, will proved 1701	75
6 Lothrop, Samuel, born 1650	79
7 Lothrop, Samuel, born 1685	82
8 Lothrop, Deborah, born 1716-17	83
Will of Robert ³ Lowthroppe	52
Will of Thomas ³ Lowthroppe	54
Sketch of the Church and persecution of John ⁴ Lowthrop in England	56
Two letters from John ⁴ Lowthrop to "Gov. Prince of Plimouth"	63, 65
Marriages and death of Mrs. Deborah Lothrop Avery	84, 85
General George Washington's letter	85
Pedigree connection of John ¹ Lowthroppe, 1634	86

THE PARK FAMILY

Authorities cited	91
Newtown, Massachusetts	92
Genealogies:—	
1 Park, Richard, Cambridge, Mass., 1635	97
2 Park, Thomas, born 1628-9	99
3 Park, John, born 1656	102
4 Park, Joseph, born 1705	103
5 Park, Benjamin, born 1735	106
6 Parke, Benjamin, born 1765	109
7 Parke, Hannah Anne, born 1804	109
8 Avery, Samuel Putnam, born 1822	110
Will of Joseph ⁴ Park, Jan. 15, 1774	104
Benjamin ⁵ Park and Bunker Hill	108
Mrs. Hannah Stanton Park's Petition for Relief	108
Pedigree connection with Richard ¹ Park, 1635	111

THE DIX FAMILY

	PAGE
Watertown, Massachusetts	115
Genealogies:—	
1 Dix, Edward, Watertown, Mass., 1635	117
2 Dix, Abigail, born 1637	118
Pedigree connection with Edward ¹ Dix, 1635	119

THE WHITMAN FAMILY

Genealogies:—	
1 Whitman, Zachariah, born 1595	123
1 Whitman, John, brother, Weymouth, Mass., 1638	126
2 Whitman, Zechariah, born 1644	130
3 Whitman, Zechariah, born 1672	133
4 Whitman, Hannah	134
Will of Zachery ¹ Whitman, 1666	125
Pedigree connection with John ¹ Whitman, 1638	135

THE FAIRCHILD FAMILY

Stratford, Connecticut	139
Genealogies:—	
1 Fairchild, Thomas, Stratford, Conn., 1638	141
2 Fairchild, Samuel, born 1640	145
3 Fairchild, Samuel, born 1683	146
4 Fairchild, Samuel, born 1710	146
5 Fairchild, John Curtiss, born 1745-6	147
6 Fairchild, Sarah, born 1773	148
Marriage Contract of Thomas ¹ Fairchild, 1671	143
Pedigree connection with Thomas ¹ Fairchild, 1638	149

THE PLATT FAMILY

Authorities cited	153
Genealogies:—	
1 Platt, Richard, New Haven, 1638	155
2 Platt, John, married 1660	158
3 Platt, Joseph, born 1672	160
4 Platt, Joseph, born 1706	161
5 Platt, Hannah, born 1737	161
Pedigree connection with Richard ¹ Platt, 1638	162

THE WHEELER FAMILY

Genealogies:—	PAGE
1 Wheeler, Moses, New Haven, 1641	165
2 Wheeler, Mary, born 1655	169
Pedigree connection with Moses ¹ Wheeler, 1641	170

THE LANE FAMILY

Authorities cited	173
Genealogies:—	
1 Lane, Job, Malden, Mass., 1643	175
2 Lane, Elizabeth, baptized 1655-6	192
Agreement between Job ¹ Lane, carpenter, and Selectmen of Malden	177
Deed of Job ¹ Lane and Fitz John ³ Winthrop, 1664	181
Deed of sale of slave Mercury to Job ¹ Lane	183
Will of Job ¹ Lane, Sept. 28, 1696	186
Inventory of estate of Job ¹ Lane	189
Pedigree connection with Job ¹ Lane	193

THE AVERY FAMILY

Authorities cited	197, 198
The Avery Family in England	199
Will of Robert ¹ Avery	202
Will of Robert ³ Avery	204
Genealogies:—	
1 Avery, Robert, will dated July 27, 1575	202
2 Avery, William	203
3 Avery, Robert, will dated March 30, 1642	204
4 Avery, William, born in England, 1622, Dedham, Mass., 1650	213
5 Avery, Robert, baptized 1649	223
6 Avery, John, born 1685-6	224
7 Avery, Ephraim, born 1713	227
8 Avery, Ephraim, born 1741	229
9 Avery, John William, born 1767	230
10 Avery, Samuel Putnam, born 1797	231
11 Avery, Samuel Putnam, born 1822	234
12 Avery, Samuel Putnam, born 1847	239
Settlement and Town Covenant of Dedham, Mass.	209
Avery homestead and oak	211
Rare painting of the Avery arms	212
Deed of William ⁴ Avery	218

	PAGE
Will of William ⁴ Avery, Oct. 15, 1683	220
The Avery seal	222
Sketch about Benjamin Parke ¹¹ Avery	232
Sketch about Samuel Putnam ¹¹ Avery	234
Notices upon the death of Henry Ogden ¹² Avery	236
Pedigree connection with Robert ¹ Avery, 1575	239

INDEX

	PAGE
PILGRIM FATHERS	241
Names, Places, etc.	242
WARREN FAMILY	244
Names, Places, etc.	244
LITTLE FAMILY	245
Names, Places, etc.	246
LOTHROP FAMILY	247
Names, Places, etc.	251
PARK FAMILY	253
Names, Places, etc.	255
DIX FAMILY	256
Names, Places, etc.	257
WHITMAN FAMILY	258
Names, Places, etc.	260
FAIRCHILD FAMILY	260
Names, Places, etc.	262
PLATT FAMILY	262
Names, Places, etc.	264
WHEELER FAMILY	264
Names, Places, etc.	265
LANE FAMILY	265
Names, Places, etc.	267
AVERY FAMILY	268
Names, Places, etc.	272

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Portrait of Samuel Putnam ¹² Avery	FRONTISPIECE
---	--------------

LITTLE FAMILY

	FACING PAGE
Ephraim ⁸ Little's Trunk, 1698	28

PARK FAMILY

Coat of Arms	92
Settler's Monument, Newton, Mass.	97
Tombstone of Rev. Joseph ⁶ Park and wife	103
Miniature of Capt. Benjamin ⁸ Parke	108
Tombstone of Capt. Benjamin ⁸ Parke	111

AVERY FAMILY

Coat of Arms	212
Seal of William ⁴ Avery and impression	222
Silhouette of Samuel Putnam ¹⁰ Avery	231
Portrait of Samuel Putnam ¹¹ Avery	234
Avery Library, Columbia University	235
Samuel Putnam ¹¹ Avery Medal	236
Samuel Putnam ¹² Avery Medal	239

Such were the fathers, such were the mothers true,
From whom our name and varied natures grew.
From whom sprang men of sturdy zeal and might,
Well armed for conflict in our country's night;
Who led the people on in faith and prayer,
Yet slackened not in thrift nor homely care;
Who held in hand the Bible and the sword,
And wielded either, as the law of God;
Who tryanny denounced with scathing tongue
The while with vigorous blows the anvil rung;
Shrank not from warfare in a righteous cause,
Yet left their children mild and peaceful laws;
Gave them broad acres, trades and schools as well,
A heritage whose value none can tell.

JANE GREENOUGH¹⁰ AVERY CARTER

INTRODUCTION

SAMUEL PUTNAM¹² AVERY, a Life Member and a Vice-President of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, died at his home, No. 61 Woodland Street, Hartford, Conn., September 25, 1920, in the 73rd year of his age. He was a son of Samuel Putnam¹¹ and Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, of New York City and a grandson of Samuel Putnam¹⁰ and Hannah (Parke) Avery of that same place. On the Avery side of his parentage, his authenticated pedigree carries his blood line back to one Robert Avery of Pylle, Co. Somerset, England, who died between July 27 and October 14, 1575. The immigrant Avery ancestor was William⁴ Avery (in the fourth generation), who came over to this country in 1650 and settled in Dedham, Mass. The Avery family in England, of which the subject of this sketch was a lineal descendant was of proven armigerous rights as is demonstrated by the authentic Avery Arms* brought over to this country by William⁴ Avery, the immigrant ancestor, and since then continuously used by the said William⁴ Avery and his descendants. Through his maternal grandmother he was a direct descendant of Richard¹ Park (1602-1665), the immigrant ancestor, who arrived in this country at Boston, on October 3, 1635, and settled in Cambridge Village (Newton), Mass. Thus it will be seen that by blood he was essentially of English lineage and of the earliest American Colonial ancestry.

Like all of the best of those who have the blood inheritance of such early and distinguished Colonial ancestry, Mr. Avery possessed those mental and moral characteristics that such honorable lineage would lead one to expect. He was distinctly

*An illuminated facsimile of these authenticated arms may be seen in Volume LI, of the *New York Genealogical and Biographical Record*, facing page 84, and a certified copy of both the Avery and Park pedigrees of Mr. Avery may be seen in the same volume on pages 84 to 90, inclusive.

all American in his patriotic motives and actions; modest and unassuming yet with a force of character which placed him in an outstanding position in all enterprises to which he devoted his mind and activity.

His father, Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery was the well known art critic, connoisseur and dealer of New York City, whose influence in the art circles of that city and of the United States was of the greatest value in his day in developing in this country the love of art and a discriminating knowledge thereof. In establishing his enviable reputation Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery built up probably the largest art clientele ever attained in this country; and, as a dealer, he was instrumental in securing for his individual clients and for public collections the best art obtainable in his time. As an unerring developer of the best artistic taste he stood pre-eminent. In the course of his business development he acquired a large fortune, much of which he distributed, being so urged by his philanthropic inclinations, amongst public institutions.

The son, Samuel Putnam¹² Avery, the compiler and author of this volume which we are introducing, succeeded to his father's business; and having likewise inherited his father's taste and discriminating judgment, he continued to carry on that business with marked success. His place of business was located on the west side of Fifth Avenue, New York City, in an unpretentious two-storied red brick building between Thirty-fourth and Thirty-fifth Streets, just north of where then stood the well known A. T. Stewart mansion (since demolished) and just south of the Thirty-fifth Street corner, where was then located the New York Club (now long since torn down). Those who were fortunate enough to have had dealings with Mr. Avery, in the days when their taste in art was immature, were one and all greatly aided in their artistic development by an association with him and grew to feel an absolute dependence upon his excellent judgment and upon the unimpeachable integrity of his dealings. His clients became his friends; those whose association with him began originally when he was a dealer, were proud subsequently to be included amongst his intimates.

Such was the origin of the writer's association with Mr. Avery; and he deems it a high compliment that the original relation culminated in a friendship which must always be one of his pleasantest memories.

Mr. Avery continued his business career for fifteen years, maintaining his residence with his parents at No. 4 East 38th Street, New York City. He was in business from 1887 to 1902; he lived in New York City from 1902 to 1909 and in this latter year removed to Hartford, Conn., where he established his permanent home at No. 61 Woodland Street, where he resided until his death,—spending his summer months at his country home on Button Island in Lake Champlain. The abandonment of the commercial side of his art career did not, however, mean the giving up of his interest in art: it meant simply that the adventitious circumstances of life had rendered him independent, and that he was thereby permitted to follow his artistic tastes solely along the lines of a collector, connoisseur and amateur (if one so professionally well equipped may ever be regarded as a mere amateur in the popularly accepted meaning of the word). He continued to collect; and, as he thus formed his well chosen collections, he from time to time bestowed many of these artistic aggregations upon public institutions where their permanent location for the benefit of future generations have become monuments to his memory. In this way the Brooklyn Museum in 1909 became the recipient of his magnificent collection of ancient Chinese Cloisonné, which collection after that year was materially augmented by him until now it is recognized as probably one of the finest collections of its kind in the world.

Even before his retirement from business, Mr. Avery developed an interest in genealogy; and, after relinquishing his business pursuits, his interest along this line of research increased and he devoted much time to the gathering of information relative to his progenitors.

In 1909, the late Samuel Putnam¹² Avery, the author and compiler of this volume, presented to the public his work "*The Avery, Fairchild and Park Families of Massachusetts, Connecticut*

and Rhode Island," in which volume he set forth with much detail and accuracy his pedigree lines in descent from William Avery, 1550, Richard Park, 1635, Thomas Fairchild, 1638, Thomas Little, 1630, and Richard Warren, 1620.

This first volume (of which the present one may be regarded as a second, revised and enlarged edition) was no more than completed and distributed than Mr. Avery conceived the idea of further elaborating the work embodied therein; and he at once devoted his time to the compilation of the present volume of which the manuscript was in a perfect state of completion at the time of his death.

It would almost seem to appear that Mr. Avery had some premonition as to his approaching death, as in the early spring of 1920 he completed arrangements with the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society for that organization to act as his literary executor in so far as the seeing this volume, which we now present, through the process of publication.

The New York Genealogical and Biographical Society was during Mr. Avery's life the grateful recipient of his benefactions and with a due sense of appreciation of the honor conferred accepted this literary executorship.

As Editor of the Society's publication the agreeable duty devolved upon the writer of this introduction to carry out the wishes of Mr. Avery and fulfill the obligations of the Society to his memory.

The task (if it may be so called) was a most acceptable one to the writer as he was a personal friend of the author, and during the latter years of his life during which he was actively interested in the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society and was one of its honored officials, the writer was thrown much with him in connection with his generous gifts to the Society made to enable it to enlarge its sphere of usefulness.

The work which we here present is essentially a pedigree volume showing the Warren, Little, Lothrop, Park, Dix, Whitman, Fairchild, Platt, Wheeler, Lane and Avery blood lines of Mr. Avery; and in his detailed elaboration of the genealogical

data relating to each generation of each blood line thus recorded, he has accumulated, in convenient shape for reference, a vast amount of information that will be found to be of great value to genealogists in general while at the same time furnishing information of incalculable value to those who may be the author's blood relatives and collateral connections. This interest in genealogy resulted in his becoming in 1905 a member of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society and thereby to become interested in that Society's welfare and development. By this interest the Society greatly benefitted in the establishment by Mr. Avery of the Art and Publication Endowment, which did much to lift the burden of publication from the Society's shoulders.

The writer is fully cognizant with all the steps in the development of Mr. Avery's interest in the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society and the knowledge thus acquired convinces him that Mr. Avery exercised the same discrimination and judgment in his numerous other philanthropic donations.

His interests, after his retirement to a strictly private life, were numerous as may be gathered from the following list of Societies, Clubs and institutions with which he was associated either officially or as a member. He was a Trustee and Vice-President of the Wadsworth Athenaeum and Morgan Memorial Museum, at Hartford, Conn.; a member and Vice-President of the Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities, Boston, Mass.; Trustee and member of the Board of Governors of the Institute of Arts and Sciences, Brooklyn, N. Y.; Trustee and member of the Board of Finance of the Lincoln Memorial University, Harrogate, Tenn.; Honorary Vice-President of the National Arts Club, of New York City; Trustee of the Watkinson Library, Hartford, Conn.; member of the Connecticut Society of Mayflower Descendants and on the Board of Assistants, Hartford, Conn.; member of the New York Society of Colonial Wars; member of the New York City, Sons of the Revolution; member of the St. Nicholas Society of New York City; member and on the Committee on Publications of the American Numis-

matic Society of New York City; Life Member, Vice-President and on the Print Committee of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society of New York City, and the establisher by endowment of the Samuel Putnam Avery Art and Publication Fund of that Society, and a Fellow in Perpetuity of the Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York City. He was a member of the Board of Directors of the Colonial National Bank, Hartford, Conn., and also Director of the Society for Savings in that city. He was also a member of the New England Society, National Sculpture Society, Iconophile Society, Municipal Art Society, American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, National Society of Mural Painters, National Association of Audubon Societies, Archaeological Institute of America, New York Academy of Science, Civil Service Reform Association, American Civic Alliance, Art League of America, Institute of Arts and Sciences, American Museum of Natural History, New York Historical Society, National Academy of Design, Honorary Member Artists' Fund Society, Geographical Society, New York Zoological Society, National Indian Association, Museum of French Art, Lake Champlain Association, American Institute of Graphic Arts, Naval History Society, New York City; Bibliophile Society, Museum of Fine Arts, New England Historic Genealogical Society, Boston, Mass.; American Academy of Political and Social Science, University of Pennsylvania, Department of Archaeology, National Municipal League, Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts, Pennsylvania Museum and School of Industrial Art, Philadelphia, Pa.; American Federation of Arts, National Genealogical Society, Washington, D. C.; Institute of Fine Arts, Chicago, Ill.; Maria Mitchell Association, Nantucket, Mass.; Municipal Art Society, Board of Trade, Archaeological Society, Connecticut Historical Society, Hartford, Conn.; Westerly, R. I., Historical Society; Dedham, Mass., Historical Society. He was also a member of the following clubs: Union League, Grolier, City History, Member and Honorary Vice-President, National Arts Club, New York City; Lake Champlain Yacht, Burlington, Vt.; Pilgrim Society, Plymouth, Mass., and Trustee of the

Hartford Theological Seminary Foundation.

The existence of such men as Samuel Putnam Avery, endowed with the possession of large wealth and at the same time possessed of inherent progressive philanthropic impulses, is of distinct value to those communities and activities in which they become interested, and Mr. Avery's passing on is a distinct loss not only to institutions which he may have benefitted, but to the community at large.

Mr. Avery's life was spent in close contact with the world of art, with the commercial side of the development of which he was originally and long associated. Later, as a result of his inborn love of art for art's sake and of his broad education acquired in the development of this natural inclination, he remained until his death an active and imposing figure in art circles.

He has passed on to a sphere of existence where art as an imitator of the beauties of nature ceases, and where those very beauties of nature themselves are glorified in the transcendent perfections of the sempiternal and divine, and where philanthropy is not an accidental individual attribute, but the very essence of eternal existence.

Knowing Mr. Avery to have been a true friend of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, and with all modesty, may it be added, the writer's personal friend, we send this most praiseworthy volume out to be greeted by its public with a full assurance that its readers will appreciate the loving and earnest study which enabled its author thus attractively to marshal his array of evidence.

JOHN REYNOLDS TOTTEN,
Fellow of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society.

AUTHORITIES CITED

For the following records of the Richard Warren and Thomas Little families in America see:

Addison's *Romantic Story of the Mayflower Pilgrims*.
Arber's *Story of the Pilgrim Fathers*.
Bachus' *Church History of New England*.
Bodge's *Soldiers in King Philip's War*.
Bradford's *History of "Plimoth Plantation."*
Cheever's *The Journal of the Pilgrims at Plymouth*.
Davis' *Ancient Landmarks of Plymouth*.
Freeman's *History of Cape Cod*.
Goodwin's *Plymouth Republic*.
Haxton's *Signers of the Mayflower Compact*.
The Mayflower Descendant.
Morton's *New England's Memorial*.
Plymouth Colony Records.
Plymouth Colony Wills.
Plymouth Deeds.
Pope's *Pioneers of Massachusetts*.
Prince's *New England Chronology*.
Richards' *History of Marshfield, Massachusetts*.
Roebbling's *Richard Warren of the Mayflower*.
Russell's *Guide to Plymouth*.
Savage's *Genealogical Dictionary of New England*.
The Avery, Fairchild and Park Families.
Thomas' *Memorials of Marshfield, Massachusetts*.
Fital Records of Scituate, Massachusetts.
Winsor's *History of Duxbury, Massachusetts*.

THE PILGRIM FATHERS

THE PILGRIM FATHERS

THE two English Virginia Companies were the stepping stones to one colonization of New England. In themselves, they did not prosper; the London one became bankrupt, and had its Charter annulled; and the Plymouth one voluntarily surrendered its Charter to King Charles I.

It is hard to conceive how New England and Virginia could ever have been peopled by Englishmen, had it not been for these Societies. King James I created them, by giving them Charters.

The First, or London, Virginia Company, was chartered 10-20 April, 1606, and was assigned American territory 34° and 41°, N. L.

To the Second, or Plymouth, Virginia Company, was assigned American territory between 38° and 45°, N. L.

After the Plymouth Charter was surrendered, and after many differences of opinion with the English Government, the Pilgrim Fathers decided to "go into y^e Low Countries."

Bradford, in his *History of Plimoth Plantation*, says: "Seeing themselves thus molested, and that there was no hope of their continuance there, they resolved to go into y^e Low Countries, wher they heard was freedom of religion for all men; as also how Sundrie from London, and other parts of y^e land had been exiled and persecuted for y^e same cause, and were gone thither and lived at Amsterdam and in other places of y^e land, and so affter they had continued together about a year, and kept their meetings every Saboth, in one place or other, exercising the worship of God amongst themselves, notwithstanding all y^e diligence and malice of their adversaries, they seeing they could no longer continue in y^e condition, they resolved to get over into Holland as they could, which was in y^e year 1607-1608."

The life of the Pilgrim Fathers in Holland was not all they had expected, because it was soon discovered that freedom of action was denied them on account of restrictions made by the Dutch Government, which required "new and unusual sects to worship in private houses"; so another move was made and with the addition of others to their members it was decided to go to America.

With the proceeds of their own estates and the assistance of the merchants to whom they mortgaged their labor and trade for seven years in return for their venture, two vessels were provided; one in Holland of sixty tons, called the *Speedwell*, which was intended to transport some of them to America, and there remain for one year in their service for fishing and the natural uses of a new settlement; another, of 180 tons, called the *Mayflower*, chartered by Mr. Cushman in London, and sent to Southampton, where Mr. Carver was waiting to superintend the equipment.

"A Governor and two or three assistants were chosen from each ship to order the people by the way and see to the dispensing of their possessions and such like affairs."

All preparations being made, the vessels pronounced ready for sea, they sailed August 5, 1620. Before the start was fairly made the *Speedwell* was reported leaky. This seemed but a trifle, and both vessels returned, the *Speedwell* was repaired, and again, August 21st, they put to sea.

Their troubles were not over; the history of the *Speedwell* was repeated, and, though no defects were revealed on the second search, the whole thing was attributed to weakness, and the vessel condemned as unfit for use. "Twenty of the passengers were put on shore, the others, transferred to the *Mayflower*," and the start for the Colony they were to found made, with the knowledge that there must be no turning back.

Who were the Pilgrim Fathers? The general answer to this must be: all those members of the Separatist Church at Leyden, who voted for the migration to America; whether they were actually able to go there or not; together with such others as joined their Church from England.

Membership in the Pilgrim Church was the first qualification; intended or actual emigration to New England was the second.

This general definition will include the Rev. John Robinson and his family, who were unable to leave Leyden, and the 35 members of the Leyden Church who arrived at Plymouth, in New England, in the *Fortune*, November, 1621; the 60 who arrived in the *Ann* and *Little James* in August, 1623; the 35 with their families, who arrived in the *Mayflower* in August, 1629; and the 60 who arrived in the *Handmaid*, in May, 1630. It likewise includes Christopher Martin and his wife, who joined from Billericay in Essex; and Richard Warren and John Billington, Sen., and his family, who came from London.

It includes also William King, who started from Southampton in the *Mayflower* on the 5th August, 1620; but who, with Robert Cushman, turned back from its voyage, at Plymouth.

It further includes hired men, such as John Howland, as Manservant in Governor Carver's family; and John Alden the Cooper: who both came out in the *Mayflower*, and eventually embracing the Pilgrim Cause, became honored men among the Pilgrim Fathers.

On the other hand it excludes all those members of the Pilgrim Church who had no wish to go to America. It also excludes all hired men who went out in the *Mayflower*; and who did not become members of the Church in the Old Colony. So, all the *Mayflower* passengers were not Pilgrim Fathers.

It further excludes (though it is *very* hard to make the exclusion) three of the four London merchants, now known as the Noble Friends of the Pilgrims, who were among the number of the Adventurers, and who also joined with the eight Undertakers of the Colony in the Composition of 15-25 November, 1626:—Richard Andrews, John Beauchamp, and James Shirley: but it includes the Fourth of these merchants, Timothy Hatherly, because he settled at Scituate about the year 1635.

The eight Colonial, and the four London Undertakers of the Composition of 1626 were also called The Purchasers. Governor

Bradford, writing in 1650, calls the passengers in the *Mayflower*, the Old Stock.

Doctor Alexander Young states, "Those who came in the first three ships, the *Mayflower*, 11-21 December, 1620, the *Fortune*, 9-19 November, 1621, and the *Ann* and *Little James*, August, 1623, are distinctively called the Old Comers or Forefathers." *Chronicles*, etc., p. 352, Ed. 1841, 8.

Various statements have, at different times, been made as to the number of the passengers that were on board the *Mayflower*, on her voyage to America in 1620. Those given by Captain John Smith are merely round numbers. The reckoning all depends on the date in respect to which it is made.

The Nominal List shows that One Hundred and Two persons left Plymouth, in Devonshire, on board the *Mayflower* on Wednesday, 6-16 September 1620; and that number may therefore be regarded as final.

While at sea, William Butler, No. 29, died and Oceanus Hopkins, No. 103, was born. So the number *on board at one time* was still 102, when the vessel first anchored in Cape Cod harbor on 11-21 November 1620, on which day the Compact was signed.

The number of *different* individuals conveyed by the ship, was further increased to 104, between the 6th, and 12th, of December, by the birth in Cape Cod harbor, of Peregrine White, No. 104, the first Englishman born in New England. So 102 individuals actually left England, 1 died at sea, 2 were born on board, and 103 actually arrived.

History states that Cape Cod was discovered by Bartholomew Gosnold, an intrepid mariner from the west of England, who sailed from Falmouth in Cornwall on the 26 of March, 1602, in a small barque, the *Concord*, with thirty-two men, for the coast known at that time as North Virginia. Instead of proceeding as was usual, by way of the Canaries and West Indies, he kept as far north as the winds would permit, and was, for aught that appears to the contrary, the first Englishman who came in a direct course to this part of the American Continent.

In fact, it is not certain that any European had ever been here

before. Bancroft confidently asserts that Cape Cod was the "first spot in New England ever trod by Englishmen." On the 14 of May, Gosnold made land and the next day found himself "embayed with a mighty head-land, which at first appeared like an island by reason of the large sound that lay between it and the main."

Near this Cape, "within a league of the land, he came to anchor, in fifteen fathoms," and his crew took a quantity of cod-fish, from which circumstance he named the land Cape Cod.

This part of the country is next brought to public notice as the first landing place of the pilgrims, who sailed from Plymouth, England, September 6, 1620, in the *Mayflower*, commanded by Captain Jones, and arrived in Cape Cod harbor, November 11, 1620 (old style).

It is said that the first act of the Pilgrims after their arrival was to "fall on their knees and offer thanksgiving to God, who brought them safe, and delivered them from so many perils." After solemnly invoking the throne of Grace, they next proposed that all the males that were of age should subscribe to a written compact, which was probably the first instrument the world ever saw, recognizing true republican principles, and entrusting all powers in the hands of the majority, thus laying the foundations of American liberty.

THE COMPACT

"In the name of God, amen. We whose names are underwritten, the loyal subjects of our dread sovereign, King James, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, defender of the faith, etc., having undertaken for the glory of God, and advancement of the Christian faith, and honor of our King and country, a voyage to plant the first colony in the northern parts of Virginia, do by these presents, solemnly and mutually, in the presence of God and of one another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politic, for our better ordering and preservation and furtherance of the ends aforesaid; and by virtue hereof, do enact, constitute, and frame such just and equal laws, ordinances, acts, constitutions, and offices, from time to time, as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the general good of the colony, unto which we promise all due submission and obedience.

"In witness whereof, we have hereunder subscribed our names, at

Cape Cod, the 11th day of November, in the year of the reign of our sovereign lord, King James of England, France, and Ireland, the eighteenth, and of Scotland the fifty-fourth, Anno Domini, 1620."

After signing the Compact they proceeded to an election of officers. Mr. John Carver had the honor of being unanimously elected to officiate as governor for one year.

THE SIGNERS

	Number in family		Number in family
1. Mr. John Carver*.....	8	22. John Turner	3
2. Mr. William Bradford*..	2	23. Francis Eaton*	3
3. Mr. Edward Winslow* ..	5	24. James Chilton*	3
4. Mr. William Brewster* .	6	25. John Crackston	2
5. Mr. Isaac Allerton*	6	26. John Billington*	4
6. Capt. Miles Standish* ..	2	27. Moses Fletcher	1
7. John Alden	1	28. John Goodman	1
8. Mr. Samuel Fuller	2	29. Degory Priest.....	1
9. Mr. Christopher Martin* .	4	30. Thomas Williams.....	1
10. Mr. William Mullins* ...	5	31. Gilbert Winslow	1
11. Mr. William White* ...	5	32. Edmund Margeson	1
12. Mr. Richard Warren ...	1	33. Peter Brown	1
13. John Howland		34. Richard Butteridge	1
14. Mr. Stephen Hopkins* .	8	35. George Soule	
15. Edward Tilley*	4	36. Richard Clarke	1
16. John Tilley.....	3	37. Richard Gardiner	1
17. Francis Cooke.....	2	38. John Allerton.....	1
18. Thomas Rogers	2	39. Thomas English	1
19. Thomas Tinker*	3	40. Edward Dotey	
20. John Ridgdale*	2	41. Edward Leister.....	
21. Edward Fuller*	3		

On Monday, November 13, says Bradford's Journal, "our people went ashore to refresh themselves, and our women to wash." Wednesday, the 15, "sixteen men were sent out with every man his musket, sword and corselet, under the command of Captain Miles Standish to explore the country."

After wandering about the land for several days, discovering

Note: Those marked * brought their wives; those in *italics* were in their graves before the end of March. Of the one hundred and one English settlers, were twenty females accompanying their husbands, and forty-two children and servants. Freeman's *History of Cape Cod*, Vol. I, p. 65.

the Indians, finding corn and fresh water, they returned to their vessel. They made other explorations, but not deeming the place good to settle in, they sailed to Plymouth, landing there December 20, 1620, and began a settlement.

The Journal of the Pilgrims says: "Richard Warren was one of the three from London, and one of the ten principal men, who, with Captain Standish, two mates, one gunner and three Saylers, set out in the *Shallop*,* 6, December, 1620, on their final trip of discovery, and who *first* landed on the Rock, in Plymouth."

* "A sloop rigged craft of twelve to fifteen tons, which they had brought between decks, having been obliged to take her partly to pieces for storage."—*Pilgrim Republic*.

THE WARREN FAMILY
OF PLYMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS

RICHARD¹ WARREN

1620

1. RICHARD¹ WARREN

1. RICHARD¹ WARREN, of ~~Greenwich~~, County ~~Kent~~, Eng-
land, sailed in the *Mayflower*, September 6, 1620, and arrived in
Cape Cod harbor, November 11 (old style*). His wife Elizabeth,
whom he married in England, before 1611, arrived in the *Ann*†,
late in July, 1623, with her five daughters: Mary², Ann², Sarah²,
Elizabeth² and Abigail².

"Mr. Richard Warren; but his wife and children were left
behind and came afterwards. Mr. Richard Warren lived some 4
or 5 years and had his wife over to him, by whom he had 2 sons,
before dyed, and one of them is maryed and hath 2 children, so
his increase is 4."‡

Morton, in his *New England's Memorial*, prints his name as
twelfth in the line of signers, and Prince in his *New England
Chronology* adds the honorable prefix of "Mr." from the Register
at the end of Bradford's folio manuscript.

Richard Warren was one of the third exploring party which
was surprised by the Indians, 18, December, 1620, at the spot
since known as "The First Encounter," and, technically speak-
ing, he was one of the first to land at Plymouth, 21, December,
1620, on what might be called the birthday of New England.

* "By the calendar in use in England and her colonies, the year began March
25th; March was therefore called the first month, although twenty-four days of it
were in the old year.

"The Latin names which we retain in common parlance, September, October,
November, and December, meaning the seventh, eighth, ninth and tenth months,
had their proper meaning; and January and February were later in the year than
December.

"In 1752, England abandoned this calendar and dropped eleven days, so adopting
'New Style,' which Holland and some other countries had used before the *Mayflower*
sailed."

C. H. Pope's *Plymouth Scrap Book*, p. 6.

† "This vessel (*Ann*) of 146 tons, arrived late in July and brought about 96
passengers."

‡ Bradford's *History of "Plimoth Plantations*.

Under the land division of 1623, Richard Warren's apportionment, as one of the *Mayflower* passengers, fell in the north side of the town with William White, Edward Winslow, John Goodman, John Crackston, John Alden, Marie Chilton, Captain Miles Standish, Francis Eaton, Henry Sampson and Humilitie Cooper; and under those who came in the *Ann*, his lands were "on the other side of the towne towards Eel River," where he made his home in the section later known as Wellingsley or Hobshole, and where he died in 1628. He also owned land along the shore of the present Warren's Cove. He stood "at the head of the 9th lot in the division of cattle in 1627." He was one of the nineteen signers of the Compact who survived the first winter.

A contemporaneous authority described him "as a grave Richard Warren," "a man of integrity, justice and uprightness, of piety and serious religion." Prince in his *Chronology* says: "1628, this year dies Mr. Richard Warren, a useful instrument and bore a deep share in the difficulties attending the first settlement of New Plymouth."

Nothing is known of his life before he joined the Pilgrims on the *Mayflower** and there are very few references to him in the Plymouth Colony Records, or the works of contemporary writers, doubtless owing to his early death.

Mrs. Warren, whose maiden surname is unknown, was rated in the Plymouth tax list of 1632-3, and was one of the first purchasers of Dartmouth. A study of the early Plymouth Records leads to the conclusion that she was a woman of force and social position in the community, and she is therein usually spoken of as "Mistress" Elizabeth Warren, a designation by no means common, and she is one of the rare instances in that early colony of continued widowhood.

A glimpse of one side of her domestic life is to be had in connection with the prosecution by the General Court of her servant, Thomas Williams, 5, July, 1635, for "speaking profane & blasphemous speeches against y^e Majestie of God." "There being

* Richard Warren joined the Pilgrims from London. *Arber*, p. 355.

some dissention between him and his dame, she after other things, exhorted him to fear God, and doe his duty."

Upon the marriage of her daughters, Mrs. Warren conveyed to their respective husbands certain lands, variously located at Eel River and Wellingsley. She died at Plymouth, 2 October, 1673 "aged above ninety years."

Children of Richard¹ and Elizabeth (——?) Warren:—

2. i. Mary^a, was born in England and came with her mother in the *Ann*, arriving at Plymouth in July, 1623. She married in 1628, Robert¹ Bartlett^{*}, born in England, 1603, a fellow passenger in the *Ann*. He was one of the first purchasers of Dartmouth, and died in 1676 aged seventy-three. His widow survived him a few years. They had eight children.
- + 3. ii. Ann^a, was born in England about 1612. *See forward*.
4. iii. Sarah^a, was born in England and arrived at Plymouth with her mother and sisters in the *Ann*. She married, March 28, 1634, John^a Cooke, eldest son of Francis¹ Cooke, the *Mayflower* passenger, and himself also of that Company, though as a child "young enough," says one authority, "to be led ashore by his father's hand." He was, however, of sufficient age to be taxed with his father; and was a volunteer for the Pequod War, June 7, 1637, "if provision could be made for his family."

It was in this year that Mrs. Warren, in consideration of a marriage solemnized between her daughter Sarah^a and John^a Cooke, of Rocky Nook, conveyed to the said John land at Eel River, which he shortly after, Nov. 11, 1637, exchanged with his brother-in-law, Robert¹ Bartlett.

He was a member of the Plymouth Military Company, August, 1643, and a representative from Plymouth in the General Court of the Colony, 1638-9, 1641-4, 1647, 1653-6.

Plymouth Church had made him one of its deacons, but disagreeing with the pastor, Reverend John Reynert[†], upon theological issues, and with others of the Colony, upon the persecution of the Quakers[‡], he removed to Dartmouth, of

* Joseph^a, son of Robert¹ Bartlett, was a selectman and joined with others in a suit against Sam Rider and William Harlowe Jun^r "for their unjust and illegally possessing themselves of a drifting whale and appropriating the same to their own use, 19, day of March 1689-90."—*Plymouth Scrap Book*.

† See *Lane Family*.

‡ "In the year 1657, there arrived in the Colony of New Plimouth, many of the pernicious sect, called Quakers: the reader may take notice that by this time, for some years after, New England, in divers parts of it, abounded with them, and they sowed their corrupt and damnable doctrines, both by word and meetings, almost in every town of each jurisdiction."—*New Eng. Memorial*, pp. 184-5.

In regard to the persecution of the Quakers, Cotton Mather says: "If any man will appear in vindication of it, let him do as he pleases, for my part I will not."—*N. E. Mem.* p. 177.

which town he was one of the first purchasers, and a selectman there 1670, 1672-3, 1675, 1679-83, and a representative to the General Court from there 1666-8, 1673-5, 1679-82, and 1686.

John^s Cooke was one of the partners in the building of the first vessel of the Colony, and was appointed to build a ferry between Dartmouth and Rhode Island.

About the time of his settlement in Dartmouth, he became an adherent of the religious principles implanted by Roger Williams and Obadiah Holmes, and was for many years a minister of the Baptist denomination*.

He died at Dartmouth, the last male survivor of the passengers on the *Mayflower*, and lies buried at Oxford, the upper village of the town, with no monument to mark his resting place.

His will, executed Nov. 9, 1694, is recorded in the *Bristol County Registry of Probate*, I, p. 139. The inventory was entered and engrossed, May 8, 1696, by Jno. Cary, Dec. 7, 1696. "April 10, 1696, the widdow, Sarah Cooke, made oath to above written inventory. Before me. Seth Pope, Justice of Peace."

"The above named Sarah Cooke being a very antient woman and unable to travile far, it was necessary that her deposition should be taken as above said to the truth of this inventory, the which I do alow and approve and doe hereby order it to be recorded in the Register's Office, this 16, day of April, 1696. Jno. Cary, Registe. Jno. Saffin, Probac.

Thus entered and engrossed May the 19, 1696, by Jno. Cary, Registe."

John^s Cooke died Nov. 23, 1695. There is no record of his wife's death. They had five children.

Francis^t Cooke, father of John^s Cooke, was born in 1577; and, following the unerring hand of Providence, fled to Holland with Pastor Robinson, and, for some cause of affinity or favoritism, became an inmate of his family—his personal charge.

To the little congregation gathered at Pastor Robinson's house, came Hester, the Walloon, later to become the wife of Francis^t Cooke. Everything points to the belief that all of Francis^t Cooke's family were to come over in the *Speedwell*, but misfortune separated them, and left Hester Cooke in "charge of many yonge children," to follow when the time was auspicious.

Only John^s Cooke was to go with his father as some compensation for the severed family ties. His mother followed,

* Winsor's *History of Duxbury*.

with her other children, in the *Ann.* History places Francis' Cooke as about 40 years of age when he reached Plymouth. He was made Freeman in 1633-34, and in 1636, as was usual with people of "high degree," received an apprentice, John Harmon, son of Edward Harmon, tailor, for the indenture period of seven years.

5. iv. Elizabeth², born in England, was also a passenger in the *Ann.* She married, at Plymouth, about 1635-6, Richard¹ Church, born in England, 1608. He probably arrived at Boston in the fleet with Winthrop, and requested admission as freeman of the Massachusetts Colony, October 19, 1630, but removed to Plymouth, and was there received as freeman, January 2, 1632-3. He was a carpenter, and one of the designers and builders of the first regular church edifice at Plymouth. To them in 1639 a little Benjamin was born, who became a colonel and was famous in the Indian wars. In 1642, the court employed him to make a gun carriage for the fort. He was made a local magistrate and represented his town in the Plymouth legislature. In 1649 he sold some land at Eel River to Robert¹ Bartlett (his brother-in-law) for £25, and took for £8. 10. 0. a red ox called "Mouse," and removed to Hingham. Richard¹ Church died in Dedham, December 27, 1668 and was buried at Hingham. His widow died at Hingham, March 4, 1670. They had twelve children.

He made a deposition at Sandwich, August 25, 1664, in which he gave his age as "about 56 years." His will, dated two days earlier, provided for his wife Elizabeth and all his children, though naming but son Joseph², who was to receive a double portion in consideration of his lame hand.

6. v. Abigail², probably the youngest daughter, was born in England and came with her mother on the *Ann.* She married, Nov. 8, 1639, Anthony¹ Snow of Plymouth, receiving as a marriage portion from her mother, Jan. 9, 1639, a deed for her "house situated near the place called Wellingsley (alias Hobshole), with the eight acres of land thereunto adjoining." Shortly after marriage Mr. Snow removed to Marshfield*, where he became one of the leading citizens of the town; was surveyor of highways in 1651, constable 1652, representative to the General Court of Plymouth Colony in 1656 and twenty years following, selectman in 1666 and afterwards for several years, collector of the excise June 3, 1668, and member of the Plymouth Council-of-War for Plymouth Colony in 1675.

* The name of Marshfield first appears in the records on March 1, 1641-2. It was represented in the Colonial Government in 1664, and its earliest list of Freeman, taken in 1644, with only a representation of eleven people, had on it Mr. Edward Winslow, Josiah Winslow, "Kandline" Winslow.

Sometime before his death he gave to the town a piece of land near the meeting-house for a graveyard, where he is buried, and which is still in use.

His will, dated Dec. 28, 1685, with codicil of Aug. 8, 1692*, named wife Abigail, and all his children. Inventory of his estate taken Nov. 12, 1692. They had six children.

7. vi. Nathaniel², was born in Plymouth. His mother came in the *Ann*, 1623, and his father died in 1628. He married, Nov. 19, 1645, Sarah Walker, who was the grand-daughter of Jane Collier†, wife of William Collier of Duxbury. It is not known who were her parents.

According to Nathaniel² Warren's deposition, in 1664‡ his house was at Eel River, and he had land in the vicinity of the present Summer Street, Plymouth, near what was formerly called Prence's Bottom, and bounded by the Town Brook and the ministerial lands. This land is probably that granted to him, June 5, 1662. After his death it became the property of his son James§.

He was also the owner of lot number five in the Namasket or Middleborough purchase; had rights in Punckateesett on Seconnett River, now in Rhode Island, as well as grants at Agawam and Manomet Ponds.

Mr. Warren was a member of the Plymouth Militia in 1643; was chosen surveyor of highways in 1654, selectman in 1657, and representative to the General Court of Plymouth Colony, 1657-8-9-1660, 1663-4-5.

His will§, executed June 29, 1667, with codicil thereto, July 16, 1667, named wife Sarah and "children, diverse of them being young," mother Mistress Elizabeth Warren, sister Mary Bartlett, Sen., Ann Little, Sarah Cooke, Elizabeth Church and Abigail Snow, and appointed Captain Thomas Southworth, brother Joseph² Warren and Lieutenant Ephraim Morton, supervisors.

The inventory of his estate was taken Oct. 21, 1667, and exhibited at Court the 30th, of the same month, on the oath of Sarah Warren, widow.

He died at Plymouth, between July 16, and Oct. 21, 1667, She died, same place, Nov. 24, 1700. They had twelve children.

Under date of Jan. 9, 1689-90, Richard³ Warren, Nathaniel² Warren, Elizabeth² Greene, Sarah² Blackwell, Thomas Gibbs, and Alice² his wife, Jonathan Delano, and Mercy²

* *Plymouth County Probate Records*, I, 156-8.

† *Mayflower Descendants*, Vol. II, p. 64.

‡ *Plymouth County Deeds*, II, 56.

§ *Plymouth Colony Probate Records*, II, 46-7.

his wife, conveyed lands, formerly owned by their father, Nathaniel² Warren, deceased, unto their brother James³ Warren*. Sarah, widow of Nathaniel² Warren, made a similar conveyance, to the said James³ Warren, on the same day.

8. vii. Joseph², was born at Plymouth, before March 22, 1627. He married, 1651-2, Priscilla², born about 1634, daughter of John¹ and Patience (Morton) Faunce†, and sister of the famous elder, Thomas² Faunce. John¹ Faunce had been a fellow passenger with Mrs. Richard Warren and her five daughters in the *Ann*.

Joseph² Warren was enrolled in the Militia of Plymouth in 1643; was surveyor of highways in 1651-2, 1662-3, 1673-4, and 1685; constable in 1670; selectman in 1686-8; representative to the General Court from 1681 until 1686, and a member of the Council-of-War of the Colony in 1675.

As an "ancient freeman of Taunton," he received a grant of land from the Colony, June 3, 1662‡.

Like his brother, Nathaniel², he had an interest in the Puncateesett lands, and he had grants at Manomet Ponds, Oct. 27, 1662; Agawam, June 5, 1677; and Eel River, Aug. 4, 1679.

He made his will§ March 4, 1689, and named as legatees wife Priscilla, children Joseph² and Benjamin³, to whom he devised lands at Middleboro' and Bridgewater, and daughters Mersey³ Bradford, Patience³ and Elizabeth³.

Joseph² Warren died at Plymouth, May 4, 1689. His widow died, same place, May 15, 1707. They had six children.

3. ANN² WARREN

3. ANN² WARREN, second daughter of Richard¹ and Elizabeth (——) Warren of England, came with her mother and four sisters in the *Ann*, and arrived at Plymouth, Mass., late in July 1623, where they joined Mr. Warren, who had come in the *Mayflower* in 1620.

Ann² was born in England about 1612¶, and married, April 19, 1633, Thomas¹ Little who reached Plymouth in 1630. See forward under record of Thomas¹ Little.

* Plymouth Colony Deeds, I, 201.

† John Faunce, who came to Plymouth in 1623, married, 1633, Patience, daughter of George Morton.

‡ Plymouth Town Records.

§ Plymouth Colony Wills, I, 38.

¶ Plymouth Colony Wills, III., 1, 40.

THE LITTLE FAMILY
OF PLYMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS

THOMAS' LITTLE

1630

1. THOMAS¹ LITTLE

1. THOMAS¹ LITTLE was born in England, and according to many writers arrived in America about 1630, but it is not positively known when, or on what ship he came. The earliest date on which he is mentioned in the Plymouth records is January 2, 1632-3, when he was taxed. He married, April 19, 1633, Ann, born in England, about 1612, daughter of Richard¹ Warren (the *Mayflower* passenger) and his wife, Elizabeth (——) Warren. He bought a shallop in 1633, and was enrolled for military service in August, 1643, at Plymouth, as was every other male in the Colony between 16 and 60, on that date.

At Plymouth there is record of a deed made by "Thomas Little sometimes inhabitant of the Towne of Plym:" and joined in by "Ann the wife of the said Thomas Little," dated 2, August, 1652, in which they sell to Richard Foster* "All that his house and land lying and being at the Eel River in the Township of Plymouth aforesaid whereon the said Thomas Little formerly lived" with "all that his lott or share of Land which he had with his wife being twenty acres bee it more or less being bounded on the one Side with the Land of Robert Bartlett" (who came in the *Ann*, July, 1623, and married, 1628, Mary² Warren, daughter of Richard¹ Warren) "and on the other Side with the Lands of Joseph Warren the north end abutting upon the Eel River aforesaid." He evidently had removed to Marshfield before August 2, 1652, as is indicated by the phraseology of the deed.

The illustration facing the first page of the issue, January, 1913, *Mayflower Descendant*, Vol. XV, p. 23, reproduces portions of two documents now in the "*Scrap Book*," in the Registry of Deeds at Plymouth. The oldest paper is signed by Thomas

* Plymouth Records, II, p. 12.

Little and William Pearse as witnesses, and is a bond for £100, Sterling, dated November 8, 1657-8. The second paper is a bond for £80, dated January 3, 1666, and signed Thomas Little, as witness.

Thomas¹ Little was a lawyer, and his coat of arms is still preserved in the old homestead, in the house of Luther Little at Sea View, Mass., formerly known as Littletown.

Thomas¹ Little was buried at Marshfield, March 12, 1671-2. His widow died *after* February 19, 1675-6.

Children of Thomas¹ and Ann (Warren) Little:—

2. i. Abigail², born at Plymouth; married Josiah Keene.
3. ii. Ruth², born at Plymouth; died after Feb. 19, 1675-6.
4. iii. Hannah², born at Plymouth; married Jan. 15 (or 25), 1661, Stephen Tilden of Marshfield. She died May 13, 1710.
5. iv. Patience², born at Plymouth, about 1639; married Nov. 11, 1657, Joseph Jones. She died at Hingham, Oct. 25, 1723.
6. v. Mercy², born at Plymouth; married the last of Nov., 1666, John Sawyer, of Marshfield. She was buried Feb. 10, 1693. He married, second, Nov. 23, 1694, Rebecca, widow of Josiah² Snow*. John Sawyer died April 28, 1711.
7. vi. Isaac², born at Plymouth about 1646. Married in 1674, or earlier, Bethiah Thomas. He died, Nov. 24, 1699, at Marshfield. She died, Sept. 23, 1718, at same place. Isaac² Little was chosen lieutenant of the Plymouth County Militia, July 7, 1681, and was made a member of the Council-of-War of the Colony, Aug. 14, 1689, serving in that body during the troubles incident to King William's War, and represented Marshfield in the General Court from 1685 until 1691.
- + 8. vii. Ephraim², born at Plymouth, May 17, 1650. *See forward.*
9. viii. Thomas²†, born in Marshfield,—. He was a member of Captain Michael Peirce's‡ Company of Plymouth Colony

* The son of Anthony¹ Snow by his wife Abigail¹, daughter of Richard¹ Warren. An interesting coincidence in connection with this marriage is that the fathers of each came in the *Mayflower* and the mothers in the *Ann*.

† Thomas² Little was younger than his brother Ephraim², but was of age when he made his will. He was therefore born between 1651 and 1655. Thomas² Little and his brother Samuel² were called "my two younger sonnes" in their father's will.

‡ Michael Peirce, of Hingham, Mass., in 1645, removed to Scituate. He was killed at Rehoboth. His will reads as follows: "New Plimoth, Jan. 15, 1675,— Goeing out to Warr against the Indians does make this my last will & Testament —." *Plymouth Scrap Book.*

troops and was slain in King Philip's War*, at Rehoboth, March 26, 1676. He did not marry.

10. ix. Samuel², born in Marshfield about 1657. Married, May 18, 1682, Sarah, born Aug. 12, 1659, daughter of Edward[†] and Mary (Winslow)[‡] Gray, of Plymouth. Samuel² Little died in Bristol, R. I. (then in Massachusetts), Jan. 16, 1707-8. His widow died, same place, Feb. 14, 1736-7.

8. EPHRAIM² LITTLE

8. EPHRAIM² LITTLE, seventh child of Thomas¹ and Ann² (Warren) Little, was born in Plymouth, May 17, 1650. Married, Nov. 22, 1672, Mary, daughter of Samuel Sturtevant[§], of Plymouth.

She died at Scituate, Feb. 10, 1717. Ephraim² Little died, same place, Nov. 24, 1717.

The will of "Mr. Ephraim Little, Late of Marshfield who deceased at Scituate November the Twenty fourth 1717," is recorded in Vol. 4 of Wills, Registry of Probate, Plymouth, pp. 113-116, and is dated 7th March, 1715, proved 24th December, 1717. He mentions: "My beloved wife Mary Little," "My daughter Mercy Otis," "My daughter Ruth Avery," "Ephraim

* "1662. This year, Philip, Sachem of Pocanaket, otherwise called Metacom, made his appearance at the Court held at Plimoth, Aug. 6, and did earnestly desire the continuance of that amity and friendship that hath formerly been between the governor of Plimoth and his deceased father and brother ——" "On June 24, 1676, broke out the Indian war by Philip, chief sachem, wherein God, for our sins, was pleased to render the Indians a great scourge to his people in this, and the other colonies of New England, both in their persons and estates ——".

"In the year 1676, Philip, the perfidious aggressor in the war, was slain on his own plantation near Mount Hope (now Bristol), by one of his own countrymen." *New Eng. Mem.*, pp. 187-8, 226.

† In *Drew's Burial Hill*, 1894, the tombstone (No. 653) is called "the oldest monument on Burial Hill,—considering which circumstance, it may be said to be in excellent condition."

‡ It reads: "Here lyeth ye body of Edward Gray —ent Aged about 52 years & Departed this life ye last of June 1681."

§ Mary Winslow was the daughter of John Winslow and his wife Mary (Chilton) Winslow, *Mayflower* passengers.

§ Samuel Sturtevant of Plymouth before 1641; planted land on shares; town officer; "Inventory of the Estate of Samuell Sturtevant Deceased taken the 22nd day of October, 1669 By Sergt Ephraim Tincome, Joseph Howland & W^m Crome. Total valuation, £147.6.10. See books of Wills and Inventoryes Recorded folio: 11:12:" *Plymouth Scrap Book*.

my eldest son" (to him real estate and a negro boy), "My son David —— a cane with a Silver Head."

Children of Ephraim² and Mary (Sturtevant) Little:—

11. i. Anna³, born Aug. 23, 1673; married, at Boston, July 3, 1694, Thomas Gray (half-brother of her uncle Samuel Little's wife). Anna³ (Little) Gray died Oct. 16, 1706, at Little Compton, Mass. (now in Rhode Island). Thomas Gray died same place, Nov. 5, 1721.
12. ii. ———, an unnamed daughter, buried at Marshfield, June 14, 1675.
13. iii. Ephraim³, born Sept. 27, 1676; married Nov. 29, 1698*, Sarah Clarke, of Plymouth. He died, Nov. 24, 1723, at Plymouth.

"In 1699, after two years probation, he was ordained pastor of the First Church, Plymouth (built by Richard Church, who married Elizabeth² Warren), and continued in the ministry until his death, Nov. 24, 1723." *Pilgrim Republic*, pp. 34-596.

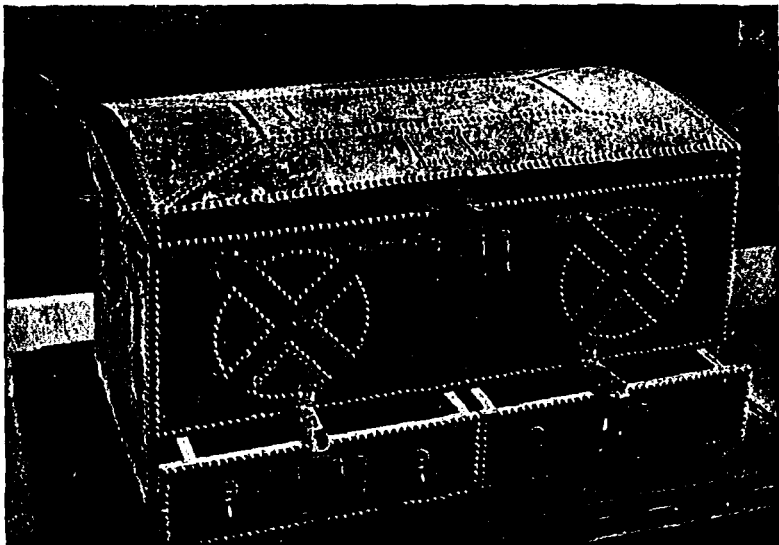
"Here lyes buried the body of Reverend Mr. Ephraim Little, Pastor of the Church of Christ at Plymouth, Aged 47 years 2 m. & 3 d. Deceased Novr ye 24, 1723." *Drew's Burial Hill*, No. 636.

In 1718, a child, being at the point of death, the pastor (Ephraim³ Little) was requested to call at the house and baptize it. This made some stir, as the first instance of the kind. He said, "I could never find a Scripture that baptism was limited to the Sabbath or public assembly." *New Eng. Memorial*, p. 434.

The will of Ephraim³ Little appears in Vol. IV, Plymouth Wills, pp. 432-4. It is dated 18, February, 1712-13, proved 30, April, 1724. He leaves all to his wife "Sarah." One item in the inventory is "one Quarter Part of ye Sloop High Pine."

14. iv. Mercy³, born Feb. 26, 1678; married Job, born March 20, 1677, son of John Otis, of Scituate, Mass. She died in 1755 at Scituate. Job, died same place, 1758.
15. v. David³, born in Marshfield, March 18, 1680-1; married Dec. 2, 1703, at Little Compton, Elizabeth Southworth, born Sept. 23, 1686, and died at Scituate, April 10, 1743. David³ Little, married, second, Oct. 21, 1746, Abigail Bailey, who died at Scituate, Feb. 5, 1775, aged 75 years, 9 months. He died, same place, Feb. 9, 1779.

* See illustration of leather trunk, marked 1698 E. L., the year Ephraim³ Little was married.



THE EPHRAIM LITTLE (No. 13) TRUNK, PILGRIM HALL, PLYMOUTH, MASS.

16. vi. John^s, born in Marshfield, March 18, 1682-3 married April 8, 1708, at Little Compton, Constant Fobes, born June 29, 1686, new style. He died, Feb. 26, 1767, at Marshfield. She died same place, June 29, 1771.

In Vol. XIX, Plymouth Wills, p. 464, appears the inventory dated 28 April, 1767, of "John Little, Esq., re late of Marshfield," the amount of his estate being £4345.15.10., one item: "To side arms 4.0.0." The will and inventory of his wife, "Mrs. Constant Little, Late of Marshfield deceased," dated 18 November, 1767, proved 6 August, 1777, is given in Vol. XXI, pp. 196-7. She speaks of herself as "Constant Little of Marshfield in the County of Plymouth Widdow," gives 6 shillings to each of her "six sons, Fobes Little, John Little, Ephraim Little, Thomas Little, William Little, and Lemuel Little," and gives the rest of her estate to "my son Abijah White and my daughter Ann White his wife and to my son Tobias Oakman and my daughter Ruth Oakman his wife."

17. vii. Mary^s, born July 7, 1685; died Oct. 18, 1685.
+18. viii. Ruth^s, born Nov. 23, 1686. *See forward.*
19. ix. Barnabas^s, born Feb. 8, 1691-2; died Feb. 23, 1691-2.

18. RUTH^s LITTLE

18. RUTH^s LITTLE was the eighth child of Ephraim^s and Mary (Sturtevant) Little, and great-grand daughter of Mr. Richard^s Warren, *Mayflower* passenger; also sister of Ephraim^s Little, pastor of the Church of Christ at Plymouth.

She was born at Marshfield, Mass., November 23, 1686. Married, November 23, 1710, John^s Avery, born February 4, 1685-6, grandson of William and Margaret (——) Avery, who came from Barkham, County of Berkshire, England, and settled in Dedham, Mass., in 1650. *See Avery Family.*

There is now, 1919, in the Christian Union Church of North Truro, Mass., a communion service which was presented to the church by Mrs. Ruth^s (Little) Avery, wife of the first pastor.

On the handles of the tankards, which are of pewter, is inscribed: "Ruth Avery to Truro Ch^h, 1721." The cups which are of solid silver, are inscribed: "This belongs to y^e Church in Truro, 1730." The pewter plates are very large, thirteen inches in diameter, and heavy, bearing this stamp of "W. Ellwood, London," but no date.

SAMUEL PUTNAM¹⁰ AVERY

Pedigree connection with Richard¹ Warren, who came from England in the *Mayflower*, November 11, 1620 (old style), and Thomas¹ Little, who arrived in 1630.

- I. Great²-grand-father, Richard¹ Warren, born in England, ———. Died in Plymouth, Mass., 1628. Great²-grand-mother, Elizabeth (——) Warren, born in England, ———. Died in Plymouth, Oct. 2, 1673, "aged above 90 years." *See Warren Family.**
- II. Great⁴-grand-father, Thomas¹ Little, born in England, ———. "Buried at Marshfield, Mass., March 12, 1671-2." Great⁶-grand-mother Ann² (Warren) Little, born in England, ———, 1612. Died in Plymouth, Feb. 19, 1675-6. *See Little Family.**
- III. Great⁶-grand-father, Ephraim² Little, born in Plymouth, May 17, 1650. Died in Scituate, Mass., Nov. 24, 1717. Great⁸-grand-mother, Mary (Sturtevant) Little, born ———. Died in Scituate, Feb. 10, 1717.
- IV. Great⁴-grand-father, John⁶ Avery, born in Dedham, Mass., Feb. 4, 1685-6. Died in Truro, Mass., April 23, 1754. Great⁶-grand-mother, Ruth³ (Little) Avery, born in Marshfield, Nov. 23, 1686. Died in Truro, Oct. 1, 1732. *See Avery Family.**
- V. Great²-grand-father, Ephraim⁷ Avery, born in Truro, April 22, 1713. Died in Brooklyn, Conn., Oct. 20, 1754. Great²-grand-mother, Deborah⁸ (Lothrop) Avery, born in Norwich, Conn., Jan. 9, 1716-17. Died in Highlands, N. Y., Oct. 4, 1777. *See Lothrop Family.**
- VI. Great²-grand-father, Ephraim⁸ Avery, born in Brooklyn, Conn., April 13, 1741. Died in Rye, N. Y., Nov. 5, 1776. Great²-grand-mother, Hannah (Platt) Avery, born ———, 1737. Died in Rye, N. Y., May 13, 1776. *See Platt Family.* Whitman Family.**

- VII. Great-grand-father, John William⁹ Avery, born in Rye, N. Y., May 24, 1767. Died in New York, ———, 1799. Great-grand-mother, Sarah⁶ (Fairchild) Avery, born in Stratford, Conn., Feb. 28, 1773. Died in New York, May 6, 1837. *See Fairchild Family.**
- VIII. Grand-father, Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery, born in New York, Jan. 1, 1797. Died in New York, July 24, 1832. Grand-mother, Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery, born in New York, April 24, 1804. Died in Jersey City, N. J., June 26, 1888. *See Parke Family.**
- IX. Father, Samuel Putnam Avery, born in New York, March 17, 1822. Died in New York, Aug. 11, 1904. Mother, Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, born in New York, Dec. 1, 1825. Died in Hartford, Conn., April 29, 1911.
- X. Samuel Putnam¹ Avery, born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 7, 1847. Died in Hartford, Conn., Sept. 25, 1920.

* The references to family records here and elsewhere made in this volume are made to those records published both in this volume and to those published in "*The Avery, Fairchild and Park Families*" compiled and published by Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery in 1919 which constitutes the first volume of which this work is the second.

THE LOTHROP FAMILY IN ENGLAND

AUTHORITIES CITED

For the following records of the Lothrop families in England and America see:

Burke's *History of the Commoners*.

Caulkin's *History of Norwich*.

Chester's *Parish Register Notes*.

Dugdale's *Monasticon*.

Freeman's *History of Cape Cod*.

Gage's *Suffolk*.

Harleian Mss., No. 1173, 1439, 6104, British Museum.

Huntington's *Lo-Lathrop Family*.

Lathrop's *Biographical Sketch*.

Lathrop Family.

Manning and Bray's *Survey*.

Morton's *New England's Memorial*.

Neal's *History of the Puritans*.

Nichol's *Leicester*.

Old Houses of the Ancient Town of Norwich, Conn.

Otis's *John Lothrop and his Descendants*.

Savage's *Genealogical Dictionary*.

Sprague's *Annals of the American Pulpit*.

Swift's *Barnstable Families*, Vol. II.

Winthrop's *Journal*.

I. LOWTHORPE

Lowthorpe is a small parish in the Wapentake of Dickering, in the East Riding of York, four and a half miles northeast of Great Driffield, having about 150 inhabitants. It is a perpetual curacy in the archdeaconry of York. This parish gave the name of the family of Lowthrop, Lothrop, or Lathrop. The church, which was dedicated to St. Martin, and had for one of its chaplains, in the reign of Richard the Second, Robert de Louthorp, is now partly ruined, the tower and chancel being almost entirely overgrown with ivy. It was a collegiate church from 1333, and from the style of its architecture, must have been built about the time of Edward III.

There has been no addition to this church since 1579. The church consists of a nave, chancel, and tower at the west end; the latter is finished with brick and clumsy pinnacles. It was formerly a very handsome structure, the windows being lofty, of three lights, with trefoil heads and three quarterfoils in the sweep of the arch. The portion of the church now used for divine service is the nave, the chancel having been desecrated for a considerable period. In this part of the church are two large ash trees and some curious monuments, one of which is a brass tablet rendered illegible by the elements. Affixed to the north side of the nave is the following historical tablet in bad repair:

"The collegiate church of Lowthorpe was an ancient rectory, dedicated to St. Martin.

"A. D. 1333 it was endowed by Sir John de Haslerton, who founded in it six perpetual chantries.

"A. D. 1364, Sir Thomas de Haslerton added another chantry for the souls of himself and Alice, his wife. He endowed the church with the manor of Lawthorpe and the mansion house.

"A. D. 1776, the inhabitants of the township of Lowthrope repaired the roof of the church.

"A. D. 1777, the church was paved, and the chancel contracted and

painted by Sir William St. Quintin, Bart., lord of the manor and patron of the living, descended from the family of the Haslertons."

Dugdale, in his *Monasticon*, Vol. VI, Part 3, 1474, gives these additional particulars of its endowment: "Here was a collegiate body or large chantry, consisting of a Rector, six chaplains, and three clerks, founded in this church in the beginning of the reign of King Edward the Third by Sir John Haslerton, patron, who got the archbishop to appropriate the parochial tithes for their maintenance."

In 1869 the south side of the chancel was entirely rebuilt, leaving however, the tower and chancel as they have stood for many generations. The church is a perpetual curacy, and the present Patron is William Thomas St. Quinton, Esq.

The following are such notices of the Lowthorpes of this parish and its near vicinity as could be gleaned during a search in England.

1216. Walter de Lowthorpe, elected sheriff of Yorkshire.

1287. Robert and Richard Lowthorp, of Whepsted, Thiagoe Hundred, Suffolk, were licensed May 6th, 16th Edward I (1287) by the crown at the gate of St. Edmunds to give to the Abbot in Mortmain eighty-seven acres of land, five acres of meadow and twelve acres of wood, in Whepsted, for the support of certain chaplains celebrating daily in the Chapel of St. John. The above lands they had purchased of Peter de Bradfeld and his wife Agnes, and of William Mitchell. *Gage's Suffolk*, p. 397.

1292. Walter de Lowthorpe is summoned to answer to the king, Edward I, for attempting to regulate the "assize of beer" on all his tenants in Lowthorpe and other places without a license from the King. He stoutly defended himself, insisting upon his unquestioned right "anent custom thro his ancestors without interruption, beyond the memory of man." *Gage's Suffolk*, p. 397.

1317. Robert de Louthorp is presented by the Abbey of St. Edmunds to the rectorship of Horningsheath. *Ibid.*, p. 523.

1392. At the death of Robert Lowthrop an inquisition was held regarding certain tenements in Beverly which he had given

to the Church of St. John in that town, the revenues from which were to be appropriated for masses by the chaplains there, for the repose of his soul.

1450. Robert Lowthorpe, of Bridlington, receives 20 s., by will, from William Sywardley, Esq., of Sywardley, April 9th, 1450. *Surtees Soc.*, Vol. 2.

1474. Aug. 3, Robert Lowthrop, of Bridlington, makes his will, which was proved at York on the 3d of the following November. He gives his landed estate to his relatives at Lowthorpe and Cherry Burton. The will gives as the name of his wife, Catharine ———, who was also his executrix. This will is printed as illustrating the position and character of the man, and as no children are named, as suggesting that he left no other family than his wife. This is also noteworthy as being the earliest will now preserved in the registry at York of any person of the name of Lowthorp.

"In the name of God, Amen, the third day of the month of August, fourteen hundred and seventy-four, I Robert Lowthorpe, of Bridlington, being of sound mind and memory make my testament in this manner.

"In the first place, I give my soul to God Omnipotent, and to the blessed Mary, and to all his Saints, and my body to be buried in the church of the blessed Mary of Bridlington.

"Also, I give my best animal for my mortuary.

"Also, I give to the light of St. John of Bridlington one silver gilt zone with eighty pearls and ten silver gilt pendants, after the death of Catharine my wife.

"Also, I give to every Priest present at my funeral on the first, sixpence, and on the seventh day, four pence.

"Also, I give to every Chaplain present the first and the seventh day, twelve-pence.

"Also, I give for wax to be placed about my body, the first day and the seventh, four pounds.

"Also, I give to the fabric of the church of St. Peter of New York, twelve-pence.

"Also, I give to the fabric of St. Mary of Bridlington, three shillings and fourpence.

"Also, I give to the parish altar of Bridlington one burde (gold tissue), and one towell and twill.

"Also, I give to the high altar of Lowthorp one burde cloth and one towell and twill.

"Also, I give to the guild of the Holy Trinity of Bridlington three and fourpence.

"Also, I give to the guild of St. Mary of Bridlington, twenty pence.

"Also, I give to the Friars' Preachers of Kingston-upon-Hull, twenty pence.

"I give the residue of all my goods not above bequeathed, to Catharine my wife, whom I make executrix, to order and dispose thereof to the health of my soul, as may seem best to her.

"In witness whereof, I have placed my seal, these being witnesses: Anthony Kirby, Parish Chaplain; John Chapman, Richard Glover, Chaplain; William Hedon, John Brigham, John Somerby, William Edwards, John Sutton, and others.

"The present testament was proved the third day of the month of November in the year of our Lord aforesaid, and administration, committed to Katharine, widow and executrix in the same will."

In addition to the foregoing records of the English Lowthorps, by the kindness of Col. J. L. Chester of London, who has been so successful in his antiquarian researches for so many years among the English church and civil records, we are able to supply the following list. These records may be of future use in completing the genealogy of that branch of the English Lothrops from which the American family of the name is derived.

The following are from Col. Chester's parish register notes, and the several parishes are successively indicated:

MUMSBY, LINCOLNSHIRE

Lathrop, Robert, son of Robert and Mary, baptized Oct. 7, 1655.
Lathrop, Gervise, son of Robert and Mary, baptized Nov. 9, 1664.
Lathrop, Mary, wife of Mr. Robert, buried Feb. 20, 1685.
Lathrop, Robert, Gent., buried Nov. 19, 1688.

LONDON

Lathrope, Mrs., of Swan's Yard, buried in St. Leonard's, Shoreditch, Sept. 16, 1665.

MARTON, LINCOLNSHIRE

Lathrop, Mr. Robert, buried Sept. 12, 1670.

CHELSEA, LONDON

Lathrop, Mr. Robert, buried in the church Sept. 14, 1719.
Halstead, Mary Henrietta, grand child of Mr. Lowthorp, buried Apr. 2, 1721.
Lowthorp, Rev. Mr. John, buried in the church Sept. 5, 1724.
Lowthorp, Francis, Gent., buried Jan. 29, 1726-7.
Lowthorp, Mrs. Elizabeth, buried Aug. 15, 1739.

Lowthorp, Mrs. Mary, buried Dec. 1, 1739.

Lathorpe, Samuel, chirurgeon of the ship *Swanne*, makes his will Sept. 22, 1636.

The will is found in Book Lee, of the London Will Office, page 93, and furnishes the following list of legatees:

Margery Lathorpe, his mother, at Bardnay, Lincolnshire.

Susanna Lathorpe, his sister, at Bardnay.

Alice Lathorpe, sister, at Bardnay.

Francis, son of Thomas Morley of Jathnell, Lincolnshire, and three other of the oldest children of Thomas Morley.

The poor of the parish of Bardnay.

Elizabeth Johnson, his sister-in-law.

Katherine Harryson, his sister-in-law.

Margaret, daughter of Elizabeth Johnson.

Mrs. Jeremy Sambroke of St. Stephens, Coleman's Street, London.

Thomas Clark, his friend, and his wife Elizabeth.

John Prowd, comdr. and John Wilson, purser of ship *Swanne*.

Thomas Lathrope, his brother, of Yorks, merchant, to be his residuary legatee.

From *Bigland's Gloucestershire*, the following records are taken:

Lathropp, Richard, Gent., died Sept. 19, 1741, aged 39 years, in the parish of Clifton, in the hundred of Barton-Regis.

Lathropp, Hannah, wife of the above Richard, died Jan. 4, 1789, aged 72.

Lathropp, Robert, their son, died young.

From *Nichol's Leicester*, p. 145:

Lowthrop, John, M. A., F. R. S., rector at Framland Hundred, Coston Church, in 1686, at the Revolution, being a non-conformist he vacated his office.

Lowthrop, John, is reported in *Nichol's Leicester*, p. 420, as of St. John's College, Cambridge, and as degraded from the ministry in 1690, for his letters to the bishop of Sarum. He afterwards became librarian to the duke of Chandos. The same record reports his death at "Canons," the duke's seat, Sept. 2, 1724, and his burial Sept. 5th, in Chelsea. (See *Chester's list*, above).

Manning and Bray's Surrey, Vol. i, 144:

John Lowthorpe, instituted Vicar of Woking, Aug. 31, 1411.

The following names are found on subsidy rolls for the places and dates reported:

Lowthrope, Robert of Homsay, 1558.

Lowthrope, John of Hessel Co., Kingston-upon-Hull, 1579.

Lowthropp, Roger of Kingston-upon-Hull, 1579.

The following marriage is reported in *Burke's History of the Commoners*, Edition of 1836:

Lathrop, Robert, Gent., of Shrewsbury, married Susannah, daughter

of Richard Scott and Susanna Gardner. This Richard Scott was born in 1648 and married in 1670.

II. ROBERT¹ LOWTHORP OF LOWTHORPE

1. ROBERT¹ LOWTHORP, whose wife was Isabell ———? resided at the time of his death at his manorial seat of Pockthorpe, in the parish of Nafferton, Dickering Wapentake, East Riding of York. His will, dated Sept. 4, 1538, was proved Nov. 9, 1539. An inquisition, *post-mortem*, was held Nov. 6, 1539, to determine what lands he held of the crown, and in the returns it is stated that he died Aug. 12, 1539, possessed of lands in Lowthorpe and adjoining villages, and that Christopher Lowthorpe was his son and heir, then aged eight years and more.

2. Christopher², born about 1530, and married Elizabeth ———? His residence was in Lowthorpe, where his will was made July 23, 1569. The will was proved June 17, 1570. In it he makes bequests to his eldest son Marmaduke³, of his mansion house with two closes thereto belonging and one-half an oxgang of land, and to his younger son Christopher⁴, one oxgang of land in Lowthorpe. His wife, Elizabeth, was to improve the mansion house, three closes, and one and a half oxgangs of land, until his sons should come of age.

The will also provided that Christopher² should give to his sister Elizabeth³ five marks out of "wools-croft" when she is of age. It also gives to John Brearwood, his brother-in-law, lands and tenements in Scarborough.

3. Isabell³.

2. CHRISTOPHER²

4. Marmaduke³, who married Margery ———? He was buried, March 13, 1609-10. His will had been made on the seventh of the same month, proved on the tenth of the following October. In his will he names his wife Margery, his sons Christopher⁴, Robert⁴, and Francis⁴, and his daughters Elizabeth⁴, Alice⁴ and Margaret⁴, all of them being minors.

5. Christopher⁴, baptized May 27, 1561.

6. Robert⁴, baptized March 25, 1565, and buried Aug. 3, 1568.

7. Elizabeth⁴, who is named in her father's will, was baptized May 11, 1568.

4. MARMADUKE³

8. Elizabeth⁴, baptized Feb. 28, 1593-4.

9. Anne⁴, baptized Oct. 22, 1595, and buried Jan. 12, 1602-3.

10. Marmaduke⁴, baptized Oct. 3, 1597.

11. Alice^d, baptized Jan. 26, 1600-1.
12. Francis^d, baptized May 20, 1603, and married Bridget——? He was chosen church warden in the parish in 1627, and buried Oct. 1, 1633, leaving an only daughter.
13. Christopher^d, baptized May 26, 1605, and married Anne ——? His residence was at Fortin, North Riding of York, where his will bears date Aug. 22, 1655, and was proved in 1661.
14. Margaret^d, baptized Sept. 2, 1607.
15. Robert^d, baptized Nov. 19, 1609, and married, July 18, 1637, Margaret, daughter of Richard Foxe, curate of Lowthorpe. He was buried Aug. 26, 1648.

12. FRANCIS^d

16. Margaret^s, baptized Oct. 28, 1632.

13. CHRISTOPHER^d

17. Marmaduke^s.
18. John^s.
19. Christopher^s.
20. Elizabeth^s.
21. Alice^s.

15. ROBERT^d

22. Christopher^s, baptized Nov. 11, 1638.
23. Anne^s, baptized Sept. 26, 1641.
24. Dorothy^s, baptized April 23, 1643.
25. Bridget^s, baptized Oct. 12, 1645.
26. Robert^s, baptized June 4, 1648.

According to Mr. Somerby's testimony, the above record furnishes the last entry of the Lowthropp name in the parish register of Lowthorpe.

III. STAFFORDSHIRE LATHROPPTS

1. MICHAEL¹ LAYTHORPE, of Staffordshire, was from the Lowthorp family of Lowthorp, and was settled in Staffordshire early in the sixteenth century. He had died before 1560. His pedigree is preserved in three *Harleian Mss.*, No. 1173, No. 1439, and No. 6104. The first *Mss.*, reports the visitation made in 1583, by Robert Glover, Somerset Herald's Marshal, to William Flower; the second reports the visitation in 1614, by Richard St. George, Esq.; and the third the visitation of 1663, reviewed in 1664 by William Dugdale.

From these sources and from the will office in London, the following pedigree has been compiled:

1. MICHAEL¹ LATHROPP

2. John² Lathropp, his son and heir, married Alice, daughter of Robert Lilly of Torksey, Lincoln County. He is reported as living in Torksey "in ye Priory neere Lincoln."

2. JOHN²

3. Thomas³ Lathropp de Bramshall, of Leighe (Lee), Staffordshire, married Mary, daughter of Robert Salte, of Yoxall and of Gauch, his wife, daughter of John St. Andrew, of Gotham, County of Nottingham. The will of this Thomas³ is dated at Leighe, May 21, 1614. In it he first provides that his body is to be buried in the church of Leighe. He makes a bequest to his wife Mary, conditioned by her marrying; to Ralphe, his third son, a minor; to Nicholas, his eldest son; to Humphrey, his second son; to his sister, Jane Whitcomb; to his brother Robert Lowthroppe; to his cousin, George Henshewe; to his godsons, Henry Hill and Nicholas Wright; to Pamel Sherret, mayd; to two children of Catherine Shipton; to Mr. Edward Holbeighe, Lincolnshire; to Alice Swanns, late Alice Milnchouse, "in receipt of my part of X trees which my cosen Salte had of Lawrence Milnchouse"; to poor people of Roxall, to John Jackson and to Francis Rate, the last two to distribute his gift to the poor of Roxall.
4. Robert³.

3. THOMAS³

5. Nicholas⁴, born in 1582, and married.
6. Humphrey⁴.
7. Ralph⁴.
8. Jane⁴, who married Francis Whitcomb of Berwick, in the County of Salop.

5. NICHOLAS⁴

9. Samuel⁵, who was living in 1664. His wife's name is not given in the pedigree.

9. SAMUEL⁵

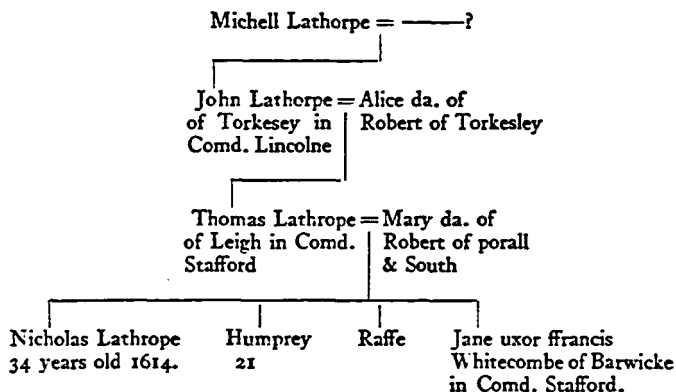
10. Elizabeth⁶.
11. Jane⁶.
12. Mary⁶.

The Mss., 6104, which gives the latest generations of this family, supplies the following blazon for the Arms: Quarterly, *g. sa.* An eagle displayed, *Ar.* Crest: a cornish Chough *proper*.

1. MICHAEL¹ LATHROPP OF STAFFORDSHIRE

From three different manuscripts the following three pedigrees were copied. I here set forth the three with all the variations and contradictions, showing some of the difficulties encountered in the establishment of the family pedigrees, even with the aid of a College of Heraldry.

Our first Mss., No. 1173, page 105, contains the report of the visitation of Staffordshire, 1583, "maid by Robart Glover als (alias) Somersett Herauld Marshall to Will^m Flower, als Norroy King at Armes, Anno Dom. 1583." A later hand had added to the same report whatever bears later date than 1583, and had affixed "—— 1614" to the former date.

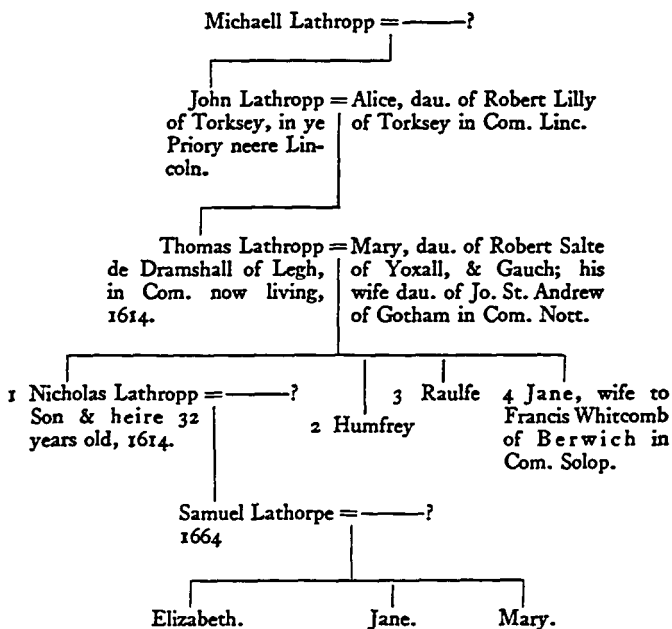


The pedigree of Michael Lathropp, Staffordshire, a branch of the family of Lowthorpe of Lowthorpe, Yorkshire, collated from the following *Harleian Mss.* in the British Museum:

I. The Mss. No. 1173—Visitation of 1583, by Robert Glover, Somerset, Herald's Marshall to Wm. Flower.

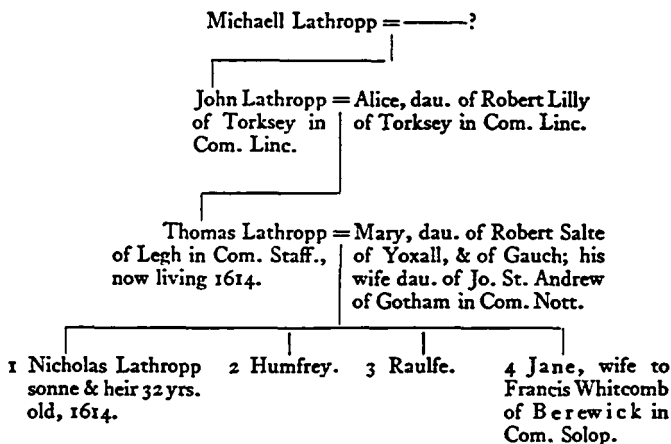
II. The Mss. No. 1439—Visitation of 1614, by Richard St. George, Esq. Norroy.

III. The Mss. No. 6104—Visitation of 1663, reviewed 1664, by William Dugdale.

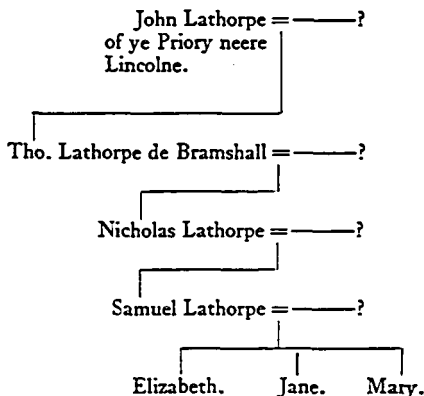


Quarterly. *g. sa.* an eagle displayed *ar.* Crest a cornish chough *proper.*

The same pedigree is thus reported in Harleian Mss. No. 1439, visitation of 1614, "made by Richard St. George, Esq., als Norroy Knight at Arms in Anno Domini 1614:"



In the visitation of Staffordshire, in 1663, by Wm. Dugdale, which was reviewed in 1664, we have reported in Harl. Mss. 6104 the same pedigree again, but beginning one, and ending two generations later.



Quarterly. *g. sa.* an eagle displayed *ar.* Crest a cornish cough, *proper.*

THE LOTHROP FAMILY
OF
SCITUATE AND BARNSTABLE
MASSACHUSETTS

JOHN^S LOTHROP

1634

1. JOHN¹ LOWTHROPPE OF LOWTHORPE

Our pedigree of that branch of the old Lowthorpe family which had its earliest known English seat in Lowthorpe, Wapentake of Dickering, East Riding of Yorkshire, must begin in John Lowthorpe, great grandfather, to Rev. John Lothrop, the American pioneer. Early in the sixteenth century he was living in Cherry Burton, a parish about four miles from Lowthorpe. He was, though belonging to a junior branch of the family, a gentleman of quite extensive landed estates both in Cherry Burton and in various other parts of the country.

In the 37th year of Henry VIII (1545), he appears on a Yorkshire subsidy roll, assessed twice as much as any other inhabitant of the parish. Of his parentage and of the names of his brothers and sisters, if he had any, we shall probably be unable to find the record, the early parish registers having disappeared.

No record of burials before 1561, none of marriages before 1562, and none of baptisms before 1597, now remain. This John¹ Lowthorpe left the son Robert² whose record we are able to give, and also three daughters whose families are mentioned, though their own names are not designated in the will of their brother. Whether there were still other children we may never be able to learn.

Children of John¹ Lowthorpe of Lowthorpe:—

- + 2. i. Robert², born in Cherry Burton, married Ellen ——. He died in 1558. His will, bearing date, North Burton (Sheributon), July 16, 1558, was proved at York, Oct. 20, 1558. *See forward.*
- 3. ii. Unnamed daughter².
- 4. iii. Unnamed daughter².
- 5. iv. Unnamed daughter².

The three sisters' families are indirectly mentioned in the will of their brother (Robert² Lowthorpe), though their own baptismal names and married surnames are not specifically stated in that will.

2. ROBERT² LOWTHROPPE

2. ROBERT² LOWTHROPPE succeeded to the estates of his father in Cherry Burton, and during his lifetime made considerable additions to them. He had married Ellen ——? who survived him fourteen years, and at her death left a will, which supplies for us the names of some of her descendants which, but for this will, might not have become known to us.

The names preserved to us in this will are those of the eldest son Thomas³, and his children Robert⁴, Elizabeth⁴, and Isabell⁴, and Robert⁴'s wife, Alice Clarke; her son Lawrence⁵, and his wife Elizabeth ——? and their children, Edward⁴ and Agnes⁴; her daughter Margaret³, the wife of Robert Hodgeson, and her own sister Margaret. Her sons were the executors of her will. 2. Robert² Lowthroppe died in 1558. His will, bearing date, North Burton (Sheributon), July 16, 1558, was proved at York, Oct. 20, 1558, and makes the following bequests. It will be seen that the later will of his widow, as reported above, confirms the list of his children as given in the will below. This will is thus fully reported as best setting before us the condition and social position of this representative of the Lowthroppe family more than three centuries ago.

WILL OF ROBERT² LOWTHROPPE OF CHERRY BURTON

1. To ye blessed sacrament of ye altar for forgotten tythes, v.s.
2. To poor people at his burial, 4 marks, by executors.
3. To ye church of "Sheributon," 6 s. 8 d.
4. To son John all lands and tenements in So. Dalton and all freehold lands and titles; the lands in Burton purchased of Richard Fenle and Marmaduke Whytinge; and in default of issue from him, the reversion of the foregoing to be unto son Lawrence and his heirs.
5. To son Thomas all lands and their appurtenances in Walkington.
6. To daughter Margaret a messuage in Beverlaie, in the Tenore of Christopher More. If she fail of issue this also to go to son Lawrence.
7. To wife Ellen, during widowhood, and then to son Thomas all leases and terms of years of his two "formolds" in Burton and Rainthorpe. If she should marry or die the leases to remain in Thomas and his executors and heirs. The said Ellen and Thomas are to succor "with

meat and drink and house room" in said "formold" in Burton all the rest of the children to their several marriages.

8. To daughter Margaret, 40 marks.
9. To son John, a gray stoned horse.
10. To son Thomas, an ambling gelding, dapple gray.
11. To son Lawrence a bright bay gelding.
12. To daughter Margaret, a branded fleet cow, in consideration of one I sold which my father gave to her. Also a lead, a table, two chairs, two trestles and a farme with a great ——? with eares (or eaves), two basings, two lavers, two candlesticks, twelve pieces of pewther, and "ye best (beast) y^e came from Beverlaie."
13. To "everie of my grandchildren, 4 d."
14. To "everie of my sisters' children, 8 d."
15. To my three sisters, everie of them, 6 s. 8 d.
16. To John Swinburne, John Pickering, William Fisher, Robert Barnes, Gavin and Hewe Mason—my servants, every of them, halfe a quarter of barlye (two bushels).
17. To Catherine Shadlock, maid servant, half a quarter of barley and a bushel of wheat.
18. Elizabeth Thornton and Isabell Coke, maid servants, either of them a mett (two bushels) of barley.
19. To ye township of So. Burton, 6 s. 8 d.
20. To children of William Burne, every of them, 8 d.
21. To William and John, sons of Henry Sowersby, 7 d. each.
22. To Alison Simson and Henry Bynks, 4 d.
23. To Robert Bynks, 4 d.
24. To every of my three sons a bound waine and a gear.
25. To Richard Eshton, a quarter of barley.
26. To Robert Hoyeson, Robert Wilson, William Burne, Robert Patenson, and John Patenson, 20 d.
27. To Thomas Jervis, 6 s. 8 d.
28. To Mr. John Eglesfield, Esq., supervisor of this will, 20 s.
29. To son Thomas, two draughts nante —— a hawked and a browne —— and fourtie weathers such as he will choose.
30. To son John, a cow "such as daughter Margaret will appoint," and a couple "stotes going at Harswell such as he choose."
31. To son Lawrence, two stotes.
32. To daughter Margaret, two whies going at Harswell.
33. "To ye Prests," 20 d.
34. To y^e Clerk, 12 d.
35. To William Burne, "my buckskin doublet."
36. To Robert Johnson, "my vilett jacket."
37. To Simon Naves, "my second best vilett jacket."
38. To son Thomas, a "jack" (coat of mail), "bill" (battle ax), steel cap and pair of splents.
39. To wife Ellen, son John, son Thomas, son Lawrence, and daughter

Margaret, the rest of the estate, and all of them are appointed executors.

Children of Robert³ and Ellen (——?) Lowthroppe:—

- + 3. i. Thomas³, born in Cherry Burton. *See forward*.
- 4. ii. John³, whose lands in South Dalton on his decease, having no children, came to his elder brother Thomas³.
- 5. iii. Lawrence³. The will of his mother (1572) makes bequests to his wife Elizabeth and to his two children, Edward⁴ and Agnes⁴.
- 6. iv. Margaret³, who according to her mother's will was the wife of Robert Hodgeson. The will also gives the names of three of her daughters—Elline⁴, Jané⁴, and Elizabeth⁴ Hodgeson.

3. THOMAS³ LOWTHROPPE

3. THOMAS³ LOWTHROPPE was born in Cherry Burton and married Elizabeth (widow) Clark, who was buried in Etton, July 29, 1574. He married, second Mary ——? who was buried in Etton, Jan. 6, 1588; and third, Jane ——? who after his death became the wife of ——? Coppendale. He removed to Etton, Harthill Wapentake, East Riding, Yorkshire, about 1576, and there he died in 1606, having made his will Oct. 5, 1606, which was proved in the following January. The several legacies specified in this will are printed in full. It will be noticed that neither of the sons who were educated is named in the will.

WILL OF THOMAS³ LOWTHROPPE OF CHERRY BURTON

- 1. Jaine, my wiewf, leas for 12 yr. for ed. of my younge children whom I give unto her with these legacies.
- 2. Richard my sonne, if he die, then to my sonne Mark, and if he be not of age XXI, my sonne to be tutor unto him.
- 3. Jane my wiewf and Lawrence my sonne, leas of Westwood, leas in territories of Scarborough.
- 4. Robart—three Kye gatts in Etton.
- 5. Mark, Lawrence, Joseph, and Bartholomew—moeity of leas of Etton pke or Calfe pke.
- 6. Bartholomew, pte Freehold lande called temple wood.
- 7. Robart—best horse.
- 8. Isabel Burne, my daughte^r, one cowe.

9. Katherine Aket, my daught^r, one cowe.
 10. Wm. Wykham, Thos. Wykham, and Jayne Wykham, children to my daught^r Audrie Wykham, one cowe among them.
 11. Robart—my best, bound wayne.
 12. Robart, all my freehold land in So. Dalton and Walkinton.
 13. Jaine, Anne, Isabel, and Elizabeth Akeit, daught^s of Wm. Akeit, my son-in-lawe each of them, one ewe.
 14. Poore of Etton, vj^a—viij^d.
 15. The rest to Jaine, my wieff, Richard, Lawrence, Marks, Joseph, Bartholomew, my sonnes, and Margaret, Luce, and Jaine Lowthorp, my daught^s whom I make executors.
- Witness. Thos. Cardener, Alexander Lyon, Henry Fenby.
 Proved Jan. 13, 1606-7.

Children of Thomas^s Lowthroppe by his first wife, Elizabeth (—?) Clark:—

7. i. Robert^t, born in Cherry Burton, married Jan. 27, 1607-8, Ann Pattison. He received from his father's will both lands and tenements in South Dalton and Walkington, the first in the Wapentake of Harthill, and the second in that of Howdenshire, both in the East Riding of Yorkshire.
8. ii. Catherine^t, married June 12, 1607, William Akett, of Leckonfield, Harthill Wapentake, East Riding of Yorkshire, who is named in the will of her brother Thomas^t, then rector of Dengie, Essex. In her father's will her children are named: Jaine^t, Anne^t, Isabel^t, and Elizabeth^t Akeit.
9. iii. Audrey^t, who is reported in her father's will as the wife of a Wickham. Her children are named in the will as: William^t, Thomas^t and Jayne^t, and the family name is spelled Wykam.
10. iv. Elizabeth^t, married Feb. 19, 1587-8, Thomas Rowood.
11. v. Anne^t, baptized at Etton, Feb. 13, 1568-9, and died young.
12. vi. Isabell^t, baptized at Etton, July 3, 1570.
13. vii. Martin^t, baptized at Etton, Oct. 21, 1572, and buried, Nov. 12, 1572.
14. viii. Andrew^t, baptized at Etton, April 23, 1574.

Children of Thomas^s Lowthroppe by his second wife, Mary —?—

15. ix. Anne^t, baptized at Etton, July 29, 1576.
16. x. Mary^t, who is named in her brother Thomas^t's will, Oct. 20, 1628, as the wife of John Gallant.
17. xi. Thomas^t, baptized at Etton, Oct. 14, 1582, and was admitted to Queen's College, Cambridge, under George Mountaine as his tutor, June 30, 1601, and took his Bachelor's degree in 1604. He married Elizabeth —? and in his will, which bears date Oct. 20, 1628, and which was proved in Consistory

Court, London, May 6, 1629, he names as legatees his wife Elizabeth, and makes the following bequests: to eldest daughter Anne^d, when she shall come of age; to second daughter Jane^d, his Wilkes' estate, Tillingham, Essex Co.; to his third daughter Elizabeth, lands in Allhorne, Essex Co.; to his youngest daughter Mary^d, the Yates gap land and Meale Field, Southminster, Essex; to his brothers John^d and William^d; to William Akett, of Leckenfield, his brother-in-law; to his sister Mary^d, wife of John Gallant, and to several servants.

+18. xii. John^d, baptized at Etton, Dec. 20, 1584, and became the pioneer and founder of the Lothrop-Lathrop family in America. *See forward.*

19. xiii. William^d, baptized May 24, 1587, and is named in his brother Thomas^d' will, Oct. 20, 1628.

18. JOHN^d LOTHROPP

18. JOHN^d LOTHROPP, for this is the form in which he wrote his name, was baptized in Etton, Yorkshire County, England, Dec. 20, 1584, and became the founder of the Lothrop family in America. When, and to whom he was married, is not known, but his first child, Jane^d, was baptized in her father's church in Egerton, Kent County, England, Sept. 29, 1614. His first wife died in London, England, early in 1634; and by her he had eight children.

John^d Lothrop was educated in Queen's College, Cambridge, where he was matriculated in 1601, graduated B. A. in 1605, and M. A. in 1609. Authentic records next locate him in Egerton, 48 miles southeast from London, in the Lower Half hundred of Calehill, Lathe of Soray, County of Kent, as curate of the parish church there.

To this living he was admitted about 1611 by the Dean and Chapter of St. Paul. Our baptismal records, already given, show that he was there in the fall of 1614, and last report his family there in the fall of 1619. It was probably his first and only parish charge as a minister of the English Church.

The church in which he officiated was an ancient structure, standing on the summit of a rounded hill, and could be seen from a great distance.

The church itself dedicated to St. James, consisted of two aisles and a chancel. At the west end rose its square tower with a beacon turret. Here Mr. Lothrop labored faithfully as long as his judgment could approve the ritual and government of the Church. But when he could no longer do this, we find him conscientiously renouncing his orders and asserting the right of still fulfilling a ministry to which his heart and conscience had called him.

Accordingly, in 1623 his decision was made. He bade adieu to the church of his youth, and with no misgivings, subscribed with a firm hand to the doctrines, and espoused with a courageous heart the cause of the Independents. Henceforth his lot was with conventicle men in his mother land, and with the exiled founders of a great nation in a new world.

The date of his leaving Egerton is 1623, and the next year he is called to succeed the Rev. Henry Jacob, an independent minister who, having been for eight years the pastor of the First Independent Church in London, resigned his place to remove to Virginia. This church, at that date, was situated on Union St., Southwark, and from the burial lot attached to it, was still later known as the Dead-Man's Place. At that date the congregation of dissenters to which he ministered had no place of public worship, their worship itself being illegal. Only such as could meet the obloquy and risk the danger of worshipping God in violation of human statute, were likely to be found in that secret gathering. Yet in goodly numbers, in such places in Southwark as they could stealthily occupy, they held together and were comforted and instructed by the minister of their choice.

For not less than eight years they so worshipped. No threats of vengeance deterred, and no vigilance of officious ministers of the violated law detected them. Keen-scented Church hounds traversed all the narrow ways of the city's most secret nooks which could by any possibility serve as a meeting place for even a small company of the outlaws.

One of the wiliest of these pursuivants of the bishop, Tomlinson by name, tracked Mr. Lothrop and his followers to their retreat.

They had met for worship as had been their wont, little thinking that it would be their last gathering with their beloved minister.

Their private sanctuary, a room in the house of Mr. Humphrey Barnet, a brewer's clerk in Black Friars, was suddenly invaded. Tomlinson and his ruffian band, with a show of power above their resistance, seized forty-two of their number, allowing only eighteen of them to escape, and made that 22d day of April, 1632, forever memorable to those suffering Christians, by handing them over in fetters to the executors of a law which was made for godly men to break.

In the old Clink prison, in Newgate, and in the Gatehouse, both made for the detention of felons, these men, "of whom the world was not worthy," lingered for months. In the spring of 1634, all but Mr. Lothrop were released on bail.

He, their leader, the chief offender, was deemed too dangerous to be set at liberty. Like the gifted Hooker, it was felt that his words and his example had "already more impeached the peace of our Church," than the church could bear. "His genius will still haunte all the pulpits in ye country, when any of his scolars may be admitted to preach." And so his prison doors swing to again and seemed to leave him no hope of release or escape.

During these months a fatal sickness was preying upon his wife, and bringing her fast toward her end. The *New England's Memorial*, by Nathaniel Morton, published in 1669, gives us these touching incidents of that imprisonment. "His wife fell sick, of which sickness she died. He procured liberty of the bishop to visit his wife before her death, and commended her to God by prayer, who soon gave up the ghost. At his return to prison, his children, being many, repaired to the bishop at Lambeth, and made known unto him their miserable condition, by reason of their good father's being continued in close durance, who commiserated their condition so far as to grant him liberty, who soon after came over into New England."

The State Papers in the New Record Office, Fetter Lane, London, have preserved some of the Star Chamber records of those days during which Mr. Lothrop was thus imprisoned.

The following copies from these records will tell their own story:

"June 12, 1634. John Lathrop of Lambeth Marsh. Bond to be certified and be attached if he appear not on next court day.

"June 19. Bond ordered to be certified and to be attached for non-appearance.

"Oct. 9. John Lathrop and Samuel Eaton, to be attached for non-appearance.

"1634-5, Feb. 19. John Lathrop and Sam. Eaton for contempt in not appearing to answer touching their keeping conventicles, their bonds ordered to be certified and they attached and committed.

"1634, Apr. 24. John Lathrop enlarged on bond to appear in Trinity term, and not to be present at any private conventicles."

The record of Feb. 19, 1634-5 was probably the order of the court which opened the way for the escape of Mr. Lathrop to America. At any rate the year had not ended before the following record showed him to be a freeman in a land in which he rejoiced to find

A Church without a bishop
And a State without a King.

The record is found on page 71 of *Gov. Winthrop's Journal*, under date of Sept. 18, 1634.

"The *Griffin* and another ship arriving with about 200 passengers. Mr. Lathrop and Mr. Sims, two godly ministers coming in the same ship."

The next page of the *Journal* has this item, which shows how tender the conscience of Mr. Lothrop was on a question of Christian propriety.

"Mr. Lathrop had been pastor of a private congregation in London, and for the same, kept long time in prison, upon the refusal of the oath, ex-officio, being in Boston, upon a sacrament day, after the sermon, desired leave of the congregation to be present at the administration, but said that he durst not desire to partake in it, because he was not then in order, being dismissed from his former congregation, and he thought it not fit to be suddenly admitted into any other, for example sake, and because of the deceitfulness of man's heart."

On reaching Boston with that portion of his London flock who had accompanied him, he found already the preparations begun to welcome him to a new home in Scituate. At least nine pioneers had built their houses in that new settlement, and to it, with such

of his people as were ready to accompany him, he repaired Sept. 27, 1634.

Some time near the end of September he makes an entry in the private Journal to preserve the names of those pioneers who had so prepared the way before him. Their names, Hatherly, Cudworth, Gillson, Anniball, Royles, Turner, Cobbes, Hewes, and Foster, show them to have been mainly London and Kent men; and would suggest that they had known of Mr. Lothrop's previous career and had called him to come among them as their minister. A letter, written in December by one of them, James Cudworth, to the Rev. Dr. John Stoughton, of St. Mary's Church, Aldermanbury, London, confirms this supposition. In referring to the unsettled plantations near Boston, of which he names three, Duxbury, Scituate, and Bear Cove, he then speaks of the second:

"Oures, Cittewate, to whom the Lord has bine verey gracious, & his p'vidence has bine Admorely sene oure beyenge to bringe vs oure Pastor whome wee so longe expected—Mr. Lathorpe, who the Lord has brought to vs in safety, whome wee finde to bee a Holy, Reverat & hevenly minded man."

This shows that in some sort the new home and field of ministerial labor had been already prepared for Mr. Lothrop at Scituate. Of his cordial welcome to it, we have this pleasant testimony from the pen of Mr. Otis.

"The kindly reception which was extended to him, and the cordial welcomes with which he was greeted, were most gratifying to his feelings, and he resolved that Scituate should be his future home—the fold into which he would gather the estrays of his scattered flocks. His grateful heart believed that the hand of God had opened this door for him,—had at last given him a resting-place from his toils. Here, protected by law, he could build up church institutions, and here he and his family could dwell together in peace, surrounded by the loving friends of his youth. Willing hands quickly built a house for his family of "meane" proportions, and of "meaner" architecture, yet it was a shelter from the storm—a place that he could call his own—a blessing from 'Him who had not where to lay His head.'"

"The walls were made of poles filled between with stones and clay, the roof thatched, the chimney to the mantel of rough stone, and above of cobwork, the windows of oiled paper, and the floors of hand-sawed planks."

The following record, preserved for us in the handwriting of the Scituate pioneer, is perhaps the only record extant regarding his call and settlement in the ministry at Scituate:

"Jann: 19, 1634, att my house, uppon w^h day I was chosen Pastour and invested into office."

Previously to this date the services had been held in Mr. James Cudworth's house; and afterwards, for some time, we find the congregation worshipping in private dwellings.

But of the beginning of his work in Scituate we have fortunately a record preserved in the copy made by the Rev. Dr. Stiles, President of Yale College in 1769, from the original in the handwriting of Mr. Lothrop himself. The following extract from this copy, which was printed in the *New England Historic Genealogical Register* for July, 1855, is worthy of preservation in this sketch:

"Touching the congregation (& Church) of Christ collected at: Scituate. The 28 of September, 1634, being the Lord's day, I came to Scituate the night before & on the Lord's day spent my first Labours, Forenoon & Afternoon.

"Upon the 23 of Novemb. 1634, o^r Brethren of Scituate that were members of Plimouth were dismissed from their membershipp, in case they joyned in a body at Scituate.

"Upon January 8, 1634 (O. S.) Wee had a day of humiliation & then att night joyned in covenant together. So many of us as had bene in Covenant before."

Then follow the names of eight brethren and the wives of four of them, and the eleventh, "myself," shows that this pioneer minister at Scituate counted himself as one of the infant church, which he was called to serve.

That Mr. Lothrop was still a widower at this date is probable from the manner in which his own record is made. But that he soon married again is shown by the records of his church, made by himself in 1635. Record No. 25 gives us this knowledge:

"My wife and Brother Foxwell's wife joyned having their dismission from elsewhere, June 14, 1635."

Who this second wife was we shall not probably be able to learn, save that her Christian name was Anna. That she was the mother of all of his children born in this country is doubtless

true. Mr. Otis supposes her to have been the daughter of William Hammond of Watertown, and says that she was a widow.

The settlement at Scituate was increased by a large addition in the summer of 1635, mainly by a new immigration from Kent. The worship of the people had thus far been held in the house of Mr. Cudworth. On Monday, Jan. 29, 1635, a meeting was held in Mr. Lothrop's house, a meeting for humiliation and prayer. In that private dwelling, by the votes of the brethren assembled, Mr. Lothrop was formally chosen the minister of the place, and by the laying on of their hands he was, as he fully believed, in true Apostolic manner once more inducted into the pastoral office.

Down to Nov. 11, 1638, Mr. Lothrop had entered on the record sixty-two names, and among them from his own family circle the following:

No. 36 and 37. Isaac Robinson & My sonn Fuller joyned having their Letters dismissive from the church at Plimouth unto us Novemb. 7, 1636.

No. 51. My sonn Thomas Lothrop joyned May 4, 1637.

No. 60 & 61. My Brother Robert Linnell & his wife having a letter of dismission from the church in London joyned to us, Septemb. 16, 1638.

The records made by Mr. Lothrop, from which we have now copied, are a good witness to us of what we shall have occasion to note hereafter, his unusually methodical and efficient business habits. They have been deemed of such importance as to have been copied not less than five times, at least all of them which survived the wear of that first century of change. Taken to Connecticut by the Rev. Elijah Lothrop of Gilead, No. 295, and falling into the hands of the Rev. Dr. Ezra Stiles of Yale College, in 1769, he made a copy of them, which is now among his manuscript papers in Yale Library. The Rev. Mr. Carleton, of Barnstable, copied Dr. Stiles' copy; and from this copy, collated with another, made by the Rev. Jonathan Russell, Mr. Otis prepared the copy of the "Scituate and Barnstable Church Records," which was printed in Vols. IX and X of the *New England Historic Genealogical Register*.

On Mr. Lowthrop consenting to settle in Scituate, the Court

granted him a farm, which their committee laid out, according to Mr. Deane, on the southeast side of Coleman's hill. It was "nigh the first Herring brook where it approaches nearest to the Sand hills; bounded by Josiah Chickett's land west, by John Hewes' land & the high way south & by Humphrey Turner's east." He was also assigned shares in the New Harbor Marshes between his house and the North River.

Though welcomed to this field by some who must have known him in England, and who probably had been his parishioners there, we learn from Mr. Deane that his ministry in Scituate "was not prosecuted with great success or in much peace." The principal reason assigned for his early removal to Barnstable has been the difference between himself and some of his people on the question of baptism. While this or some other cause of alienation in the church is most apparent in the records which he left, another ground of dissatisfaction at Scituate, is the only one formally named in the letters which follow, and which are here introduced for the two-fold purpose of explaining the removal which so soon followed the settlement, and also to preserve the only authentic document from his pen—excepting the church records—now known to exist. That copies of his "Queries respecting Baptism" were printed in London, a few years after his removal to Barnstable, we know from "Hamburg's Independents," in which he refers to them. Yet probably no copy of the issue can now be recovered; certainly none is indexed among the Lothrop collections in the British Museum, and no antiquary of whom I enquired in England had ever seen it.

The letters which now follow were found among Mr. Winslow's papers, and were published in the first volume, second series of the Massachusetts Historical Collections:

Scituate, February 18, 1638.

"To the right worthy and much-reverenced Mr. Prince, governor—Grace, mercy and peace be forever multiplied.

"Sundry circumstances of importance concurring towards the present state of myself and the people in covenant with me, presse me yett againe to sett pen to paper, to the end that the busyness in hand might with greater expedition be pressed forward, if it may be: not willing to

leave any lawful means unattempted, that we are able to judge to be the means of God, that soe we might have the more comfort to rest in the issue that God himselfe shall give in the use of his own means. Yett I would be loth to be too much pressing here in least the more haste on our part should occasion the less speed, or overspurring, when by reason of abundance of freeness, there needs none at all, I should dishearten, and so procure some unwillingness. But considering your godly wisdom in discerning our condition and presuming of your love unfeigned to usward, which cannot but effect a readiness on your part in passing by and covering of our infirmitye, I am much emboldened, with all due reverence and respect, both to your place and person, to re-salute you.

"The truth is, many grievances attend mee, from the which I would be freed, or att least have them mitigated, if the Lord see it good. Yett would I raither with patience leave them, than to grieve or sadd any heart, whose heart ought not to be grieved by me, much lesse yours, whom I honour and regard with my soule, as I do that worthy instrument of God's honour, to gether with yourselfe, Mr. Bradford, because I am confident you make the advancinge of God's honour your chiefeest honour. And the raither I would not bee any meanes to grieve you, inasmuch as I conceive you want not meanes otherwise of grief enough. But that I be not too tedious, and consequently too grievous. The principal occasion of my present writing is this: your worthy selfe, together with the rest joynd and assisting in government with you, much revered and esteemed of us, having graciously and freely uppon our earnest and humble suites, granted and conferred a place for the transplanting of us, to the end God might have the more glorye and wee more comfort: both of which wee have solidd grounds to induce us to believe, will be effected: For the which free and most loveing grant, we both are and ever remain to bee, by the grace of the highest, abundantly thankful. Now here lyes the stone that some of the brethren here stumble att; which happely is but imaginariye, and not reall, and then there will be no need of removeall. And that is this, some of them have certaine jealousies and fears, that there is some privie undermining and secrett plotting by some there, with some here, to hinder the seasonable successe of the work in hand, to witt of our removeall, by procuring a procrastination, in some kinde of project, to have the tyme deferred, that the conveniencye of the tyme of removinge beeing wore out before we can have free and cleare passage to remove, that soe wee might not remove att all. But what some one particuler happely with you, with some amongst us here, may attempt in this kinde for private and personal ends, I neither know, nor care, nor fear, forasmuch as I am fully perswaded that your endeared selfe, and Mr. Bradford, with the rest in general, to whom power in this behalfe belongeth, are sincerelye and firmelye for us, to expedit and compleate the busyness as soon as may be, so that our travells and paines, our costs and charge, shall not be lost and in vaine herein, nor our hopes frustrated. Now the trueth is, I have been the more willing to endite

and present these few lines, partly to wipe away any rumour that might bee any wayes raised upp of distrustfullness on our partes, especially, to clear my own innocencye of having any suspition herein; as alsoe to signifye since the place hath been granted and confirmed unto us; some of the brethren have sold their houses and lands here, and have put themselves out of all. And others have put out their improved grounds to the half increase thereof, upon their undoubted expectation forthwith as it were to begin to build and plant in the new plantation. Wherein if they should be disappointed, it would be a means to cast them into some great extremitye.

"Wherefore lett me intreate and beseech you in the bowells of the Lord, without any offence, both in this respect, as also for other reasons of greater importance, which I will forbear to specifye: To do this further great curtesy for us to make composition with the Indians for the place, and priviledges thereof in our behalfe, with that speed you cann; and wee will freely give satisfaction to them, and strive to bee the more enlarged in thankfulnessse to you. I verily thinke wee shall never have rest in our spirits, to rest or stay here; and I suppose you thinke little * * * *otherwise*, and am therefore the more confident that you will not neglect any opportunitye, that might make for our expedition herein. I and some of the brethren have intreated our brother John Cooke, who is with you, and of you, a member of your congregation, to bee the best furtherance in such occasions, as either doe or may concerne us, as possibly hee, may or cann, who hath alsoe promised unto us his best service herein. Thus wishing and praying for your greatest prosperitye every wayes, I humbly take my leave.

Remaining to be at your command and service in the Lord.

John Lothrop."

(Subscribed thus)

"From Scituate, Feb. 18, 1638.

*To the right worthy and much-honored Governor Prince,
att his home in Plimoth.*

Give these I pray.

Second Letter.

"To the right worthy and much-honoured Mr. Prince, our endeavoured governor of Plymouth,—Grace, mercy, and peace be multiplied."

"My dear and pretious,

Esteemed with the highest esteeme and respect, above every other particular in these territories; being now in the roome of God, and by him that is the God of gods, deputed as a god on earth, unto us, in respect of princely function and calling. Unto whome wee ingeniously confesse all condigne and humble service from us to bee most due. And if we knowe our hearts, you have our hearts, and our best wishes for you. As Peter said in another case, doe wee in this particular say, it is good for us to be heere: (wee mean under this septer and government) under which wee can bee best content to live and dye. And if it bee possible

we would have nothing for to separate us from you, unless it be death. Our souls (I speak in regard of any of us) are firmly lincked unto your worthy self, and unto many, the Lord's worthies with you. Wee shall ever account your advancement ours. And I hope through grace, both by prayer and practice, wee shall endeavour to our best abilitye, to advance both the throne of our civill dignitie, and the kingly throne of Christ, in the severall administrations thereof in the midst of you. Hereunto (the truth is) we can have no primer obligation, then the strait and stronge ties of the gospell. If we had no more, this would alwayes bee enough to binde us close in discharge of all willing and faithful duetye both unto you and likewise unto all the Lord's annointed ones with you. But seeing over and above, out of your gracious dispositions (through the grace and mercy of the Highest) you are pleased to sett your faces of favour more towards us (though a poor and contemptable people) than towards any other particular people whatsoever, that is a people distinct from yourselves. As wee have had good and cleare experience hereof before, and that from tyme to tyme; soe wee now againe in the renewed commiseration towards us, as most affectionate nursing fathers, being exceeding willing and readye to gratifye us, even to our best content, in the point of removall: Wee being incapacitated thereunto, and that in divers weighty considerations, some, if not all of which, are well known bothe to yourselfe, and to others with you. Now your love being to us transcendant, passing the love you have shown to any with you, wee can soe much the more, as indebted unto our good God in praises, soe unto yourselves in services. Wee will ever sett downe in humble thankfullness in the perpetual memory of your exceeding kindness. Now we stand stedfast in our resolution to remove our tents and pitch elsewhere, if we can see Jehovah going before us. And in very deed, in our removeing, wee would have our principal ende, God's own glorye, our Sion's better peace and prosperitie, and the sweet and happie regiment of the prince of our salvation more jointly imbraced, and more fully exalted. And if externall conveniences as an over-plus, shall bee cast in, according to the free promise of the Lord, wee trust then, as we shall receive more compleate comfort from him, soe he shall receive more compleate honour by us: for which purpose we humbly crave, as the fervencye of your devotions, soe the constancye of your wonted christian endeavours. And being fully persuaded of your best assistance herein, as well in the one as in the other, wee will labour to wait at the throne of grace, expecting that issue that the Lord shall deeme best.

In the intrim, with abundance of humble and unfeigned thanks on every hand on our parts remembered, wee take our leave, remaining, obliged forever unto you, in all duety and service.

John Lothrop."

"From *Scituate*, the 28 of this 7th month, (*September*) 1638."

"N.B. Three names are subscribed beneath the name of Mr. Lothrop, which are not perfectly legible: the first appears to be *Anthony*

Aniball; the second, — *Cobb*; the third, — *Robinson*; to which are added the words, "In behalf of the church" (Superscribed thus:) "*To the right worthy and much-reverenced Mr. Prince, Governor at Plimoth.*"

Leaving the foregoing letters to explain as they may the reason for a removal, we find the following statement of Mr. Otis as to its date:

"Mr. Lothrop and the large company arrived in Barnstable, Oct. 11, 1639, O. S., bringing with them the crops which they had raised in Scituate. Pressed as they must have been with the preparations needed for wintering comfortably in their new home, they did not forget that the main object of their pilgrimage from the Mother land, was the service and glory of God. With no house of worship yet built, they meet and worship in the rude pioneer house of one of their number, poor Mr. Hull. Ten days after their arrival they gave a whole day to fasting, humiliation, and prayer, whose object was "For the grace of God to settle us here in church estate and unite us together in holy walking, and make us faithful in keeping covenant with God and one another."

Eleven days later, on the eleventh of December, they set apart another day for religious worship, this time for the worship of thanksgiving. "The day was very cold, and after the close of the public service they divided into three companies to feast together, some at Mr. Hull's, some at Mr. Mayo's, and some at brother Lumberd, Senior's."

What sort of thanksgiving service they had under the lead of Mr. Lothrop, appears from the records of the Scituate church, in reporting the first thanksgiving in the new town, Dec. 22, 1636, the record covering not only the religious offering of the public service, but also the festive and social offerings in their several homes, afterward. It is here quoted as setting before us, clearly, a practical estimate of the pioneer minister and his people:

"Beginning some half an hour before nine, and continued until after twelve o'clock, ye day being very cold, beginning with a short prayer, than a psalm sung, then more large in prayer, after that another psalm, and the WORD taught, after that prayer, and then a psalm. Then making merry to the creatures, the poore sort being invited by the virtue."

On coming to Barnstable, he built, according to Mr. Otis, a small house. Mr. Palfrey tells us that "Four acres for a house lot had been assigned to Mr. Lothrop, soon after his arrival, on the east side that enclosure which probably had been used for interments from the first settlement." But the first home of the new pastor was both too small and uncomfortable. His second was a more substantial building, and made ready for occupancy

about 1644. That it was built of solid and enduring material is well attested in the simple fact that its frame still stands. Mr. Otis thus testifies concerning it: "The house has undergone many transformations, but the original remains. It is now one of the prettiest buildings in the village, and it is occupied for a parsonage and a public library."

Mr. Otis, who has written more than any other writer upon the American life of our pioneer, John Lothrop, and who was on the ground where he spent the last years of his ministerial life, and who was thoroughly familiar with all the records of the church and town, and who perhaps had facilities for forming an estimate of his character and influence which no other man has used to the same extent, has, at several points in his weekly articles on "John Lothrop and his descendants," given glimpses of the man which we can do no better than to preserve.

In No. 230 of his articles, he says: "John Lothrop and his followers were held by the people to be martyrs in the cause of Independency. No persecutions, no severity that their enemies could inflict, caused him or one of his followers to waver. They submitted without a murmur to loss of property, to imprisonment in loathsome jails, and to be separated for two years from their families and friends, rather than subscribe to the forms of worship that Charles and his bigoted prelates endeavored to force on their consciences."

In No. 245, he says of him and his sons: "Mr. Lothrop was as distinguished for his wordly wisdom as for his piety. He was a good business man, and so were all of his sons. Wherever one of the family pitched his tent, that spot soon became a center of business, and land in its vicinity appreciated in value. It is the men that make a place, and to Mr. Lothrop's in early times, Barnstable was more indebted than to any other family."

From No. 231, we take the following: "Whatever exceptions we may take to Mr. Lothrop's theological opinions, all must admit that he was a good and true man, an independent thinker, and a man who held opinions in advance of his times. Even in Massachusetts a half century has not elapsed since his opinions

on religious toleration have been adopted by the legislature."

"Mr. Lothrop fearlessly proclaimed in Old and New England the great truth that man is not responsible to his fellow man in matters of faith and conscience. Differences of opinion he tolerated. During the fourteen years that he was pastor of the Barnstable church, such was his influence over the people that the power of the civil magistrate was not needed to restrain crime. No pastor was ever more beloved by his people, none ever had a greater influence for good.—To become a member of his church, no applicant was compelled to sign a creed or confession of faith. He retained his freedom. He professed his faith in God, and promised that it should be his constant endeavor to keep His commandments, to live a pure life, and to walk in love with the brethren."

Mr. Morton, who "thought meet in his Memorial to nominate some of the specialest" of the worthy ministers whom God had sent into New England, names as the fourth on his list "Mr. John Lathrop, sometimes preacher of God's word in Egerton," and elsewhere in the Memorial he testifies to his former fidelity in London, in witnessing against the errors of the times. Still again he says of him: "He was a man of humble and broken heart spirit, lively in dispensation of the Word of God, studious of peace, furnished with godly contentment, willing to spend and be spent for the cause of the church of Christ."

Mr. Lothrop died in Barnstable, Nov. 8, 1653, the last entry on his church records in his own hand having been made June 15, 1653.

A will was made by him which he failed of signing, though it was, without objection, admitted to probate. Letters of administration were, however, granted March 7, 1653-4 to "Mrs. Laythorpe," and Mr. Thomas Prence was "appointed and requested by the court to take oath unto the estate at home."

The following is a memoranda of the will as left by Mr. Lothrop: "To my wife my new dwelling house. To my eldest son Thomas, the house in which I first lived in Barnstable. To my son John in England, and Benjamin here, each a cow and £5.

Daughter Jane and Barbara have their portions already. To the rest of the children, both mine and my wife's, each a cow. To each child one book, to be chosen according to their ages. The rest of my library to be sold to any honest man who can tell how to use it, and the proceeds to be divided," etc.

The inventory estimates the rest of the library to be worth £5.

18. JOHN⁴ LOTHROPP

18. JOHN⁴ LOTHROPP was baptized, Dec. 20, 1584, in Etton, Yorkshire County, England. When, and to whom he was married is not known, but his first child, Jane⁵, was baptized, Sept. 29, 1614, in her father's church, in Egerton, Kent County.

His first wife died, early in 1634, in London. They had eight children.

He married, second. ———, 1635, Anna ———. He died Nov. 8, 1653, in Barnstable, Mass. His second wife and widow died in the same place, Feb. 25, 1687-8. They had six children.

Children of Rev. John⁴ Lothrop by his first wife whose baptismal and maiden surname are not known:—

20. i. Jane⁵, b. in England and baptized in her father's church in Egerton, County of Kent, Sept. 29, 1614. She came with her father to America in 1634, and was married in Scituate, April 8, 1635, "ye 4th day of the weeke," by Capt. Miles Standish, of Plymouth, to Samuel² Fuller. This marriage was solemnized at the house of Mr. James Cudworth. Mr. Fuller was a son of Edward¹ Fuller and his wife Ann; he had come over in the *Mayflower* with his parents, and he, as Savage informs us, "out-lived the hardships" of that immigration.

Both his father and mother died the first winter, and Samuel² Fuller was left in the care of his uncle Samuel¹ Fuller, who had also come over in the *Mayflower*, and who proved to be one of the most valuable members of that primitive community, and who was memorable as the first physician who came to New England to settle. Samuel² Fuller died Oct. 31, 1683, one of the last survivors of the *Mayflower*. Samuel² and Jane (Lothrop) Fuller had nine children.

21. ii. Anne⁵, baptized in Egerton, England, May 12, 1616, and buried April 30, 1617.

22. iii. John^t, baptized in Egerton, England, Feb. 22, 1617-18. This child probably died before the family came to America; certainly before the birth of the second John^t in 1644-5.
23. iv. Barbara^t, baptized in Egerton, England, Oct. 31, 1619, and married July 19, 1638, John Emerson. Her father's record of this marriage is: "My sonn Emmersonn & my daughter Barbrah married at Duxberry by Captain Standige."

That they settled at least for a time in Scituate is shown in this record in Mr. Lothrop's own hand: "One Linkes slaine by a bow of a tree in ye cutting down of the tree, March 6, and buried in the way by John Emmersonn's house near Goodman Stockbridge, March 10, 1637."

Mr. Savage supposes this John Emerson may have been of Ipswich, Massachusetts, and that he was that John, who came over in the ship *Abigail*, 1635. He is entered on the ship list as a baker, age 20.

24. v. Thomas^t, born in England, and probably in Egerton, about 1621, as we infer from his own deposition, taken April 4, 1701, in which he states that he is "about 80 years of age." The will of his father designates him as his eldest son, which is proof that the John who was baptized in 1617-18 was not living.

The probability is that his birth succeeded the withdrawal of his father from the curacy of the parish church in Egerton, Kent, where the older children were recorded. At least this is certain, that the baptism of his older sister is the last baptism at Egerton found on the copy of the baptisms which the father made.

At the age of about thirteen he came with his father to Scituate, at which place we find this first record regarding him in this country: "My sonn Thomas Lothrop joined May 4, 1637."

This was his admission to the church in Scituate, from which he removed with his father to Barnstable, in 1639, where he soon gained distinction among the pioneers of the new town.

The second record we find is in Barnstable, as follows: "My sonn Thomas and brother Larnett's daughter, widow Ewer, were married in the Bay (Boston), Dec. 11, 1639." The "daughter" above referred to was Sarah, daughter of William Larned, and widow of Thomas Ewer.

In 1641 Thomas^t Lothrop is reported as land surveyor at Barnstable, and in 1643 as one liable to bear arms.

He became quite a large land holder and an enterprising business man. He was enrolled as freeman June 3, 1656. He served the town in several offices, indicating his standing as honored among his fellow townsmen. His death took place

in 1707. Thomas^s and Sarah (Larned) Ewer-Lothrop had five children.

+25. vi. Samuel^s, born in England, and came with his father to Scituate in 1634. *See forward.*

26. vii. Joseph^s, born in England, probably in Lambeth, London, in 1624. He probably also came over to America with his father in 1634. The first record regarding him in this country is that of his marriage—the last Lothrop marriage recorded by his father in the registers of the Barnstable church:

“Joseph Lothrop and Mary Ansell married alsoe by him (Brother Thomas Hinckley), Dec. 11, 1650.” He settled and lived in Barnstable, where his name on the local records show him to have been an enterprising and honored man. He was a deputy for the town in the General Court of the Colony for fifteen years, and for twenty-one years served as one of the selectmen of his town. On the organization of the county he was appointed the register of the probate court, and recorded in 1666 the first deed put on record in the county. The court had appointed him in 1653 to keep the ordinary of the town. He was admitted freeman, June 8, 1655. In 1664 we find him an acting constable, and in 1667 a receiver of excise. That he was also in the military service is shown in the titles of lieutenant and captain conferred upon him.

Mr. Freeman, in his history of Cape Cod County, speaks of him as a “conspicuous member of the Council of War in 1676.” He also reports Lieut. Joseph Laythorpe and his brother Barnabas Laythorpe as commissioned to hold select courts in Barnstable in 1679; and names both of these brothers as among those of the agents for the settlement of Sippecan.

His standing is still further shown in a letter from Capt. William Basset written from Casco, in September, 1689, to Gov. Thomas Hinckley, reporting his skirmishes with the Eastern Indians. At the close of this report the captain presents a statement of his own and of his lieutenant's services to the Governor, and to Esq. Lothrop, and to Mr. Russell. We know enough of that day to be assured that none but a prominent and public man would be thus complimented.

Joseph^s Lothrop probably had no collegiate education, yet he must have been well instructed—probably with a legal education. His will bears date Oct. 9, 1700, and was proved Apr. 9, 1702, between which two dates his death, of which no record is preserved, must have occurred.

He names in his will as heirs, his four sons, Samuel^s, Barnabas^s, Hope^s to whom he left the homestead, and Thomas^s

and his two daughters, Mary^a Denes and Elizabeth^a Fuller. Joseph^a and Mary (Ansell) Lothrop had twelve children.

In the inventory of his estate there are reported 27 volumes of law books, and 43 volumes of the classics and of sermon books; the inventory amounting to £8216. There were also mentioned, "three negroes."

27. viii. Benjamin^a, born in England, and brought over in 1634, to Boston. He married in Barnstable, Martha —? and settled in Charlestown, Mass., where he was a man of note, holding the office of first selectman in 1683.

Good wife Martha Lathrop was admitted to the church in Charlestown in the year 1660. Benjamin^a and Martha (—?) Lathrop had nine children.

Children of Rev. John^a Lothrop by his second wife Anna (—?) Lothrop:—

28. ix. Barnabas^a, "Bernabus, son of John Lothrop," as his father wrote in the baptismal record, baptized at Scituate, Mass., June 6, 1636, and married Dec. 1, 1658, Susanna, daughter of Thomas and Susanna (Ring) Clarke of Plymouth and grand daughter of the Thomas Clarke who was the mate of the *Mayflower*. Susanna (Clarke) Lothrop died, as her headstone shows, Sept. 28, 1697, *act.* 55. By her Barnabas^a Lothrop had fourteen children.

Barnabas^a married, second, Abigail Dodson, widow, who died Dec. 21, 1715, *act.* 72. The church records report that she was "dismissed from the 1st church in Boston, and removed here Feb. 23, 1706-7." Barnabas^a Lothrop was also a noted man. He became the first judge of probate in Barnstable on the organization of the court, having his brother Joseph^a Lothrop as clerk of the court.

He was Deputy from 1675 to 1682, Judge of Common Pleas, 1692, and the same year was appointed a counsellor with Governor Hinckley, Governor Bradford, and John Walley, to represent New Plymouth at Boston, under the new charter. He died Oct. 26, 1715. On his headstone his title is Esq. The inscriptions on these three stones in the old burying lot near the county jail in Barnstable are as distinct as when first cut. In the will of Barnabas^a Lothrop dated June 8, 1713, and probated Nov. 27, 1715, he names the following legatees, with the relationship indicated: his wife Abigail; his only son Barnabus^a; his grand-son Barnabus^a, the "only son of my son John^a, deceased": grandson John^a, son of "my son Nathaniel^a, deceased"; his brother John^a and two sisters, Abigail Clark and Bathshewa Marsh; his daughter-in-law, Elizabeth Crocker; his grandson, Joseph Lewis,

son of Ebenezer Lewis; and "my seven children now remaining; my kinswoman Bethya Hinckley, now dwelling with me, my six daughters, Abigail Sturgis, Susana Shurtlef, Bathsewa Freeman, Anna Lewis, Sarah Skeffe, and Thankful Hedge; and Bethya Clagborn who is my daughter-in-law."

29. x. "A child^s born in Scituate, July 30, 1638, and died the same day."
30. xi. Abigail,^s baptized in Barnstable, Nov. 2, 1639, O. S., "The first record since our coming to Barnstable, Oct. 11, 1639." She married Oct. 7, 1657, James, son of Thomas Clark and Susanna, daughter of widow Susanna Ring. They settled in Plymouth, to which place the father, Thomas Clark, had come in the ship *Ann*, in 1623.
31. xii. Bathsha^s, as spelled in the records made by her father, was baptized in Barnstable, Feb. 27, 1641, and married Alexander Marsh. She was probably his second wife. They lived in Braintree, Mass., where his will was made Mar. 19, 1697, and where he died March 7, 1698. His will calls his wife Bathsheba, whose death, Jan. 8, 1723, aged 82, is certified by her gravestone in the Dorchester burying lot. Alexander and Bathsheba (Lothrop) Marsh had five children.
32. xiii. John^s, born in Barnstable, Mass., Feb. 9, 1644, and married Jan. 3, 1671-2, at Plymouth, Mass., Mary, probably daughter of James and Mary (Tilson) Cobb of Scituate, where she was born Dec. 3, 1653. His name on the marriage record is Laythrope, and she is called Mary Colsgain. He married, second, Dec. 9, 1695, Hannah, widow of Dr. John Fuller. He died Sept. (18) 27, 1727, at 11 o'clock A.M., and is recorded as 85 years old, on the Barnstable church records.

On Mr. Otis' authority we know that he was a man of note among the seafaring men of the coast at that early day, sailing as captain in command of his own vessel. On the New Haven, Conn., records is found this evidence of his seaman-ship.

"These certify I received on board of ye *Swan*, John Lothrop Mr., 8 bbls. pork, 48 bush. wheat of Sam'l. Hemingway of New Haven, for the use of Capt. Elisha Hutchinson of Boston, and doe promis to deliver ye same on paying freight 3 s. d. per bbls. and 6 d. bush. Apr. 1, 1691.

Jo. Lothrop."

His will, Book IV, p. 407, dated Mar. 9, 1726-7, and probated Feb. 9, 1727-8, names as his legatees his wife Hannah; son John's son Joseph^s; the children of his daughter Mary^s Howland, and those of his daughter Elizabeth^s Lewis; and his sons Barnabas^s and Benjamin^s. His son Barnabas^s and his

wife Hannah are executors. John^s and Mary (Cobb—probably) Lothrop had thirteen children.

33. xiv. —? "a man childe of John Lothrop dying immediately after it was borne, buried Jann. 25, 1649."

25. SAMUEL^s LOTHROP

25. SAMUEL^s LOTHROP, was born in England and came with his father to Scituate in 1634, thence to Barnstable, where he married, Nov. 28, 1644, Elizabeth Scudder, who had been dismissed from the church in Boston, Nov. 10, 1644, to remove her church relation to that in Barnstable. She is reported in Savage as a sister to that John Scudder who was in Barnstable in 1640.

Samuel^s Lothrop had made the acquaintance of Elizabeth Scudder in Boston, where he commenced his business life as house builder, afterwards combining extensive farming operations with his building. Their marriage was recorded by his father on the Barnstable Church Register as follows: "My sonn Samuel & Elizabeth Scudder marryed at my house by Mr. Freeman, Nov. 28, 1644."

They settled in Barnstable, where his house stood next to that of John Scudder.

He is reported, in 1643, as one of the five Lothrops at Barnstable liable to bear arms.

In 1648 he removed to New London, Conn., then called Pequot. We now find Mr. Lothrop mentioned in two letters from Governor Winthrop to his son John, Jr., at Pequot. In one of these, bearing date Aug. 14, 1648, on the subject of obtaining a minister for the settlement, he writes: "Your neighbor Lothrop came not at me (as I expected) to advise about it," etc.

His house lot in the new plantation was the third in order from that of John Winthrop, Jr., Esq., and his name is one of the first eighteen to whom were assigned lands on the east side of the "great river" of Pequot, and for these the lots were drawn on the 17th and 31st of January, 1648-9.

Almost at once Mr. Lothrop is assigned by his new townsmen to places of responsibility and honor. The General Court of the Colony, in May, 1649, organized a local court at Pequot, having for its judges John Winthrop, Esq., Samuel Lothrop, and Thomas Minor, giving them power to sit in the trial of all causes between the inhabitants in which the differences were under forty shillings.

In 1650 he appears with fifteen other townsmen in town meeting "to arrange a system of co-operation with Mr. Winthrop in establishing a mill to grind corn."

He received a large grant of land, also, on the west side of the Pequot River north of the settlement. It was about five miles up the river at a place called Namussuck. A farm of 260 acres at this place remained in the family until 1735, when it was sold by his grandson Nathaniel, after settling all claims, for 2300 pounds.

His "cattle marks" were recorded before 1650. When, in 1657, Uncas, routed by the Narragansetts, had been chased into the fort at the head of the Nahantick and was there besieged, Lieut. James Avery, Mr. Brewster, Samuel⁶ Lothrop* and others, well armed, succeeded in throwing themselves into the fort and aided in the defence.

He sold his town homestead in 1661 to the Rev. Gershom Bulkley. This house stood beyond the bridge over the mill brook, on east side of the highway toward Mohegan.

In 1679 is recorded a contract of Mr. Lothrop for building the Second Church in New London.

He removed to Norwich in 1668. Miss Caulkins in her history of Norwich says, "after the first thirty-eight proprietors the next inhabitants who came in as grantees of the town are John Elderkin and Samuel Lothrop." A house lot was first granted

* Samuel⁶ Lothrop, Member Barnstable Co., 1643. In Major Willard's Expedition against Ninigret 1654:

Register Society of Colonial Wars, 1899-1902, p. 699.

Swift's Barnstable Families, II, p. 162.

Lothrop Family, pp. 38, 46, 58, 76.

to John Elderkin, who, finding it too far from his business, had it conveyed to Samuel Lothrop.

Mr. Lothrop appears to have reected a house on the town street before 1670, which from that time became his home. The house built by Dr. Daniel Lothrop, his great-grandson, about 1745, probably stands upon the same site.

The house lot of seven acres, on which he settled, covered mainly that hill side enclosed by the streets and lanes, as now, and extending down to the present main street. He added during his lifetime successive tracts of land amounting to about four hundred acres.

The town records of that time are very imperfect, but we find Samuel⁵ Lothrop recorded as "Constable" in 1673 and 1682, and as "Townsmen" in 1685,—dignified local offices in those days.

After the death of his first wife, of which no record is preserved, he married in 1690, in Plymouth, Mass., a maiden lady, Abigail, the daughter of Deacon John Doane of Plymouth. She was born Jan. 29, 1632, and lived until 1734, Mr. Lothrop having died Feb. 29, 1700.

The following notice of the second Mrs. Lothrop is found in Miss Caulkins' History of Norwich: "On her hundredth birthday a large audience assembled at her house, and a sermon was preached by the pastor of the church. At this time she retained in a great degree the intelligence and vivacity of her earlier years. At the time of her decease the descendants of her husband amounted to 365."

Mr. Lothrop left a nuncupative will, proved in 1701.

Children of Samuel⁵ and his first wife, Elizabeth (Scudder) Lothrop:—

34. i. John⁶, baptized in Boston, Dec. 7, 1645, married Dec. 15, 1669, Ruth, daughter of Robert Royce, of New London. John⁶ and his sister Elizabeth⁶ were married at the same time by Commissioner Daniel Wetherell, and the record appears among the other records of the Commissioners' Court. The next year we find him called to Wallingford, as the following vote on record shows:

"Sept. 10, 1677. Vote to send Jo. Lothrop to come and conclude arrangements for building the mill."

By some marvel of dispatch which we could hardly look for in those early days, within three days' time he had already entered on the work of building the mill. The only explanation of it seems to have been in the pressing necessities of the new town, which would not allow them to wait even for the usual settlement of the terms on which the mill should be built, as the following record will suggest.

"Sept. 13, 1677. Vote that if Jo. Lothrop go on with all speed and complete his mill which he hath begun—leaving all agreement to a convenient time—the town grants him his 30 acres."

That grant covered the site of the mill. To it were added two other grants, one of 44 acres "peculiar" to it, and one of 40 acres upland. The town also remits his tax for building the mill.

In 1681, the entire control of the mill was put into his hands. His heirs sold the property in 1704, but to this day the meadow is called the "Lothrop Lot." He died, as the Wallingford records show, Aug. 25, 1688, aet. 44. Ruth, his widow, in Feb. 19, 1689-90, drew lot No. 4, in the distribution of that date. The inventory of his estate was presented to probate May 18, 169-? and is recorded in Book No. 2, of the New Haven probate records, and in it he is named "John Lothrop, late of Wallingford." John^a and Ruth (Royce) Lothrop had seven children.

35. ii. Elizabeth^a, born in March, 1648, and married Dec. 15, 1669, Isaac, son of Robert Royce of New London, and settled in Wallingford. After his death she married Joseph Thompson of Wallingford, who was a collector of taxes there as late as 1681, and had six children.
- +36. iii. Samuel^a, born in March, 1650. *See forward.*
37. iv. Sarah^a, born in October, 1655, and married as his second wife, April 21, 1681, Nathaniel, son of Nathaniel Royce of Wallingford, where they settled, and where she died Nov. 11, 1706. He was a carpenter and joiner and blacksmith, and died Feb. 8, 1736, having had four wives. He had four children by Sarah^a Lothrop.
38. v. Martha^a, born in January, 1657, and married in 1677, John, son of John Moss, the immigrant of this name, at New Haven, and who became so prominent in the new town of Wallingford, and died there in 1707, at the age of 103 years. Martha^a (Lothrop) Moss died Sept. 21, 1719. Her husband died March 31, 1717. They had ten children.
39. vi. Israel^a, born in October, 1659, and married April 8, 1686, Rebecca, daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth Bliss, who went

from Saybrook to Norwich. Her grandfather was Thomas Bliss, Sen., of Hartford. They settled in Norwich and had ten children. Israel⁶ Lothrop's rank among his townsmen in 1730, when all the freemen were enrolled, was next to his brother Samuel⁶. He was a man of worldly thrift, and had a family of enterprising sons, who are said to have planted themselves on seven hills within the old nine-miles square of Norwich. He died March 28, 1733. She died, Aug. 22, 1737. His headstone in old Norwich Town burial ground is the oldest one now there with an inscription on it. It gives us this tribute to his worth: "Here lies buried ye body of Mr. Israel Lothrop, ye Husband of Mrs. Rebekah Lothrop, who lived a life of exemplary piety and left ye Earth for Heaven Mar. ye 28, 1733, in ye 73d year of his age." Israel⁶ and Rebecca (Bliss) Lothrop had ten children.

40. vii. Joseph⁶, born in October, 1661, and married, April 8, —? Mary Scudder, who died Sept. 18, 1695. He married, second, Feb. 2, 1696-7, Elizabeth "Waterhouse," daughter of Isaac and Sarah Watrous. She was born March 22, 1661, and died Nov. 29, 1726. He married, third, Nov. 22, 1727, Mrs. Martha Perkins, widow of Deacon Joseph Perkins of Newent, now Lisbon, then a part of Norwich. He was a member of the first Church. He died in Norwich, July 5, 1740, and to his death record is added "born 1661." He had four children by his first wife, Mary Scudder and eight by his second wife, Elizabeth Waterhouse (Watrous).
41. viii. Abigail⁶, born in May, 1665, and married Dec. 9, 1686, John son of Christopher and Ruth (Rockwell) Huntington. John and Abigail⁶ (Lothrop) Huntington had nine children. One daughter, Martha⁷ Huntington, born Dec. 9, 1696, married Noah Grant, of Tolland, and became the ancestress of President Ulysses S. Grant.
42. ix. Anne⁶, born in August, 1667, and married William, third son of William and Sarah (Calkins) Hough, of New London. He was born Oct. 13, 1657, and died April 22, 1705. She died, in Norwich, Nov. 19, 1745. William Hough, Sen., was the son of Edward Hough, of Westchester, County of Chester, England. He came to Gloucester, Mass., where he married Oct. 28, 1645, Sarah, daughter of Hugh Calkins, the pioneer.

36. SAMUEL⁶ LOTHROP

36. SAMUEL⁶ LOTHROP was born in March, 1650, married Nov. 1675, Hannah Adgate, who died Sept. 18, 1695. He

married, second, Dec. 30, 1697, Mary Edgerton of Norwich. They settled in Norwich where she died Jan. 31, 1727-8, and where he died Dec. 9, 1732. His rank among the citizens of Norwich is shown in the enrollment of 1730, where his name stands next to the two Deacons Huntington, their names following those of the three ministers, Lord, Willes, and Kirtland. He was a member of the First Church in Norwich.

Children of Samuel⁶ and Hannah (Adgate) Lothrop:—

43. i. Hannah⁷, born in Norwich, Jan. 6, 1677, and married, June 30, 1698, Jabez, son of Jacob and Elizabeth (—?) Perkins of Ipswich, Mass. He and his brother Joseph had purchased in 1695, a large tract of land in that part of Norwich which is now Lisbon; on which, after his marriage, he settled. He became one of the wealthiest and most honored citizens of Norwich. He was admitted inhabitant in due form in 1701, and died there Jan. 15, 1741-2. She was an excellent Christian woman, and died April 14, 1721; afterwards Dec. 17, 1722 he married, for his second wife, Charity Leonard. He had eight children by his first wife, Hannah⁷ Lothrop and one by his second wife, Charity Leonard.
44. ii. Elizabeth⁷, born Nov. 1, 1679, and married, as his first wife, Nov. 5, 1701, John, born in March, 1670, second son of Thomas Waterman, the pioneer of this name in Norwich, and his wife Miriam, daughter of Lieut. Thomas Tracy. Elizabeth⁷ (Lothrop) Waterman died Oct. 5, 1708, and her husband married second, Sept. 27, 1709, Mrs. Judith Woodward, and third, April 16, 1721, Elizabeth Basset. Miss Caulkins says that by his first wife, Elizabeth⁷ Lothrop, he had a family of six or seven sons and two daughters, but I have found records of only four children. By his second marriage to Mrs. Judith Woodward he had five children; by his third marriage to Elizabeth Basset he had three children.
45. iii. Thomas⁷, born Aug. 25, 1681, and married, Feb. 24, 1708-9, Lydia, daughter of Joshua and Mehetable (Smith) Abel, of Norwich. She died March 22, 1752. He became a thriving man, having a good record as a Christian citizen. Letters of administration on his estate were taken out Oct. 22, 1774, by his brother Joshua and Joseph Coit. The inventory of his estate was £4452, 9 s. 10 d.; that of Mrs. Lothrop was £5852, 6 s. 10 d. Thomas⁷ and Lydia (Abel) Lothrop had three children.
46. iv. Margaret⁷, born Oct. 1, 1683, and died April 1, 1696.
- + 47. v. Samuel⁷, born Jan. 6, 1685. *See forward.*

48. vi. Simon⁷, born May 3, 1689, married Mary⁷ Lothrop, born Nov. 15, 1696, daughter of Israel⁶ and Rebecca (Bliss) Lothrop (No. 39 of this record); Rebecca Bliss was a daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth (—?) Bliss. Mary⁷ (Lothrop) Lothrop must have died soon after her marriage as her husband married, second, March 24, 1714, Martha⁷ Lothrop, born Nov. 15, 1696, twin sister of Mary⁷ Lothrop, his first wife. Their names were both entered on the roll of the First Church of Norwich in 1721. Simon⁷ Lothrop soon exhibited his large business talent, attaining early to the first rank among his townsmen. His name appears as one of the pioneers in occupying and improving the locality which was soon to become the site of the City of Norwich. In 1721 a square of 20 feet is granted him, with two of the Huntingtons and Daniel Tracy, on the west side of Rocky Point, on which to lay the foundations of their business prosperity. In 1724 the town vote him liberty "to build a wharf at the landing place at his own charge, provided it shall be free to all mortals." Ten years later the town give him the special right of building a warehouse on the hillside opposite his dwelling house, 30 feet by 40, to hold for his personal use during the town's pleasure. In addition to his prominence as an enterprising business man, he became still better known as a military officer. The History of Norwich, by Miss Caulkins, says of him: "Col. Simon Lothrop was a man of more than ordinary renown. He commanded one of the Connecticut regiments in the successful expeditions against Annapolis and Louisburg, and was valued for his judgment in council as well as for his gallant bearing in the field. At one period he was left for a considerable time in the chief command of the fortress at Cape Breton." He had entered the service as Lieut. Col. commanding the Connecticut regiment for the above expedition, and received the commission of Colonel, Oct. 29, 1745.

Mr. Lothrop was several times a representative from Norwich in the General Assembly of the Colony. He was often under appointments from the Assembly on important commissions, relating alike to the interests of business and religion. Of his home-life we have these touches in the history before quoted: "He was an upright man, zealous in religion, faithful in training up his family, and much respected and esteemed for his abilities and social virtues." Of both his military popularity and his business thrift we have preserved for us the following hearty tribute in the spirit of the times which produced it:

"Col. Lotrop he came on,
As bold as Alexander;
He wa'nt afraid, nor yet ashamed
To be the chief commander.

Col. Lotrop was the man,
His soldiers loved him dearly;
And with his sword and cannon great,
He helped them late and early.

Col. Lotrop, staunch and true,
Was never known to baulk it;
And when he was engaged in trade,
He always filled his pocket."

His will is dated April 2, 1772, and names as his legatees, wife Martha; son Elijah²; son Rufus²; daughter Martha Devotion of Windham; daughter Mary Bingham, to whom were given the land and buildings bought of Col. John Dyer in Canterbury; Eunice Huntington; Lucy Fitch; grand daughter of Hannah Truman; grandson David Nevins; and grand daughter Eunice Carew, and her husband, Ebenezer Carew.

In the distribution of widow Martha's estate; April 20, 1776, the legatees named are: Elijah and Rufus Lathrop; Eunice Huntington; Mary Bingham; Hannah Truman; and grandson Simon Fitch.

His death occurred Jan. 25, 1774, and that of his widow Oct. 16, 1775. Their remains lie interred side by side in the Norwich Town burying ground. Simon⁷ and Martha⁷ (Lothrop) Lothrop had nine children.

49. vii. Nathaniel⁷, born July 15, 1693, and married, April 25, 1717, Ann, daughter of Joseph and Elizabeth (Huntington) Backus, who was born in Norwich, Jan. 27, 1695, and died Aug. 24, 1761. He settled first on the Namussuck farm, which his great-grandfather had owned in New London, but in 1735 he sold that farm and removed to Norwich. He was with his older brother Colonel Simon⁷ Lothrop, in the Louisburg expedition, having been commissioned lieutenant, Dec. 12, 1745. He died in Norwich, as his gravestone attests, March 20, 1774. Nathaniel⁷ and Ann (Backus) Lothrop had seven children.

47. SAMUEL⁷ LOTHROP

47. SAMUEL⁷ LOTHROP was born Jan. 6, 1685, and married, July 24, 1715, Deborah Crow. Their names are both on the roll of the First Church of Norwich, in 1717. In the probate records he bears the title of Esquire. His will bears date Oct. 30, 1754, when he is said to be of "Newent," and the legatees are his wife, son Ezra², son Elisha², and daughter Deborah

Avery. The same parties are mentioned in the distribution. He died Nov. 7, 1754.

Children of Samuel⁷ and Deborah (Crow) Lothrop:—

- +50. i. Deborah⁸, born Jan. 9, 1716-17. *See forward.*
51. ii. Ezra⁸, born Dec. 4, 1718, and married, in Newent, Norwich, Jan. 20, 1742-3, Charity, daughter probably of Jabez Perkins, by his second wife, Charity Leonard. He died Nov. 9, 1760. The inventory of his estate, admitted to probate Dec. 10, 1760, styles him Lieutenant Ezra⁸ Lothrop. Ezra⁸ and Charity (Perkins) Lothrop had six children.
52. iii. Samuel⁸, born Jan. 1, 1720-21, married Feb. 10, 1742-3, Elizabeth Bishop. In his will, dated Jan. 30, 1750-1, he is said to be of the New Concord Society, now Bozrah, Conn., and his legatees named are: wife Elizabeth, son Elisha⁸, and son Samuel⁸. The distribution of the estate, made Mar. 8, 1765, names as legatees, Elizabeth, wife of Wm. Witter, Esq., eldest son Samuel⁸, son Thomas⁸, son Simeon⁸, son John⁸, and daughters, Susannah⁸ and Elizabeth⁸. He died Aug. 20, 1754, and, as we infer from this will, his widow married William Witter. She lived, according to the testimony of her grand daughter, Mrs. Farnham, to be 105 years old. Samuel⁸ and Elizabeth (Bishop) Lothrop had seven children.
53. iv. Elisha⁸, born Dec. 29, 1723, and married, May 28, 1745, Abigail Avery. They lived in that part of Norwich which is now Lisbon, where his will, dated June 19, 1788, was made which gives him the title of Esq.; and names as heirs: son Septimus⁸, son Elisha⁸, daughters Deborah⁸ and Mary⁸, and grand daughter Amy Bishop. Elisha⁸ and Abigail (Avery) Lothrop had six children.
54. v. Elizabeth⁸, born Jan., 1725-6, and died Oct. 30, 1726.
55. vi. Hannah⁸, born June 15, 1728, and died Jan. 8, 1731-2.

50. DEBORAH⁸ LOTHROP

50. DEBORAH⁸ LOTHROP, was born in Norwich, Conn., Jan. 9, 1716-17, eldest daughter of Samuel⁷ and Deborah (Crow) Lothrop; direct descendant of John¹ Lothroppe of Lowthorpe, Wapentake of Dickering, East Riding of Yorkshire, England. "In the 37th year of Henry VIII (1545), John¹ Lothroppe appears on a Yorkshire subsidy roll, assessed twice as much as any other inhabitant of the parish."

Deborah⁸ Lothrop married, Sept. 21, 1738, Ephraim⁷ Avery, born April 22, 1713 (Harvard, 1731), second son of John⁸ and Ruth (Little) Avery, of Truro, Mass.; he was a direct descendant of Richard¹ Warren, *Mayflower* passenger, 1620, of Thomas¹ Little of Plymouth, Mass., 1630, and of William¹ Avery, of Dedham, Mass., 1650.

Ephraim⁷ Avery died Oct. 20, 1754, at Brooklyn, Conn., leaving seven children, two sons, Samuel⁸ and Septimus⁸ having died before their father. *See Avery Family.*

Mrs. Deborah⁸ (Lothrop) Avery, who was left a widow Oct. 20, 1754, at the age of thirty-eight, with seven children, by her first husband, Ephraim⁷ Avery, married Nov. 21, 1755, for her second husband, Mr. John Gardiner, born June 9, 1714; he was the 5th Proprietor of Gardiner's Island, N. Y.

The ceremony of this her second marriage probably took place at the house of *his* (John Gardiner's) brother-in-law (her cousin), Dr. Joshua Lothrop (Mr. Gardiner's first wife having died the next day after the death of Mrs. Avery's first husband, Ephraim⁷ Avery). Mr. Gardiner died May 19, 1764, leaving two children.

Deborah⁸ (Lothrop) Avery-Gardiner, married, third, June 3, 1767, as his second wife, Col. Israel Putnam*, born June 7, 1718, son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Porter) Putnam, of Salem, Mass.

† "This marriage gave new dignity to his social position, bringing him into connection with many prominent families and with the ecclesiastical element so potent in Connecticut at this period. Mrs. Putnam had a large circle of friends and much social experience. Her husband was the most popular man of the day. Their hospitable home drew throngs of visitants. Every soldier passing through Windham County would go out of his way to call upon his beloved Colonel."

When reading about Putnam's evacuation of West Point and the cause, viz., his forces having been greatly reduced, and by a division of a council of his officers that it would be impossible to

* "A marriage was solemnized between Col. Israel Putnam and Mrs. Deborah Gardiner, June ye 3rd, 1767." Chandler's *Pomfret Records*, p. 419.

† Larned's *History of Windham County, Conn.*, Vol. II, p. 6.

maintain the post against superior numbers, we learned that **"It was determined to retire with the troops to Fishkill, a post twelve miles up the river and to commence immediately the removal of the stores."*

Gen. Putnam, in his letter to Gen. Washington, writes that his wife "died last Tuesday night" (which was October 14, 1777), the letter being dated at Fishkill, October 16, 1777 (which was Thursday).

Gen. Washington in his reply to him, dated October 19, 1777, writes: "I am extremely sorry for the death of Mrs. Putnam, and sympathize with you upon the occasion. Remembering that all must die and that she lived to an honorable age [her 61st year] I hope you bear the misfortune with that fortitude and complacency of mind that become a man and a Christian. I am Dear Sir with great esteem Yours &c

GEO. WASHINGTON."

"His wife Deborah accompanied him in most of his campaigns till her death."

"It was in the midst of these stirring scenes (1777), when burdened with public cares, that Gen. Putnam was called again to experience the heaviest of domestic afflictions in the loss of his wife. She died at his quarters about a week after his removal to Fishkill (and about ten days after the loss of Forts Montgomery and Clinton), and it is not improbable that her death was hastened, if not caused by the exposure and fatigue incident to this sudden change.

"In the same dispatch which communicated these afflicting tidings to the Commander-in-Chief, Gen. Putnam announced the surrender (capitulation signed October 14th, 1777, at 8 P. M., as per Gov. Clinton's letter to Gen. Putnam, dated Albany, 15th October, 1777), of Burgoyne, and the retaking of Peekskill and the Highland passes on the east side of the river."

"Mrs. Putnam died October 14th, 1777, at the Highlands, North River, and was buried in Col. Beverly Robinson's family vault."

* *Cutler's Life of Putnam.*

Gen. Putnam* died May 29, 1790, at Putnam, Conn.

SAMUEL PUTNAM¹³ AVERY

Pedigree connection with John¹ Lowthroppe, who in the 37th year of Henry VIII (1545) appears on a Yorkshire subsidy roll, assessed twice as much as any other inhabitant of the parish. Nothing is known regarding the name of his wife or when either of them died.

2. Great³-grandfather, Robert² Lowthroppe, born in Cherry Burton. His will, bearing date, North Burton (Sheributon), England, July 16, 1558, was proved at York, Oct. 20, 1558. Great³-grandmother, Ellen —, died in 1572. See *Lothrop Family* as here before recorded.
3. Great⁴-grandfather, Thomas³ Lowthroppe, born in Cherry Burton, died in Etton, England, 1604. Great⁴-grandmother, Elizabeth (widow) Clark, buried in Etton, July 29, 1574.
4. Great⁵-grandfather, John⁴ Lothrop, baptized in Etton, Dec. 20, 1584, died in Barnstable, Mass., Nov. 8, 1653. Great⁵-grandmother, name not known, but she died in London, early in 1634.
5. Great⁶-grandfather, Samuel⁵ Lothrop, born in England, 1623 (?), came to America with his father, to Scituate, Mass., in 1634, died in Norwich, Conn., Feb. 29, 1700. Great⁶-grandmother, Elizabeth (Scudder) Lothrop, married, Nov. 28, 1644, died in Norwich before 1690, when her husband married his second wife.
6. Great⁷-grandfather, Samuel⁶ Lothrop, born in New London, Conn., March, 1650, died in Norwich, Dec. 9, 1732. Great⁷-grandmother, Hannah (Adgate) Lothrop, married, Nov., 1675, died in Norwich, Sept. 18, 1695.
7. Great⁸-grandfather, Samuel⁷ Lothrop, born in Norwich, Jan. 6, 1685, died in Norwich, Nov. 7, 1754. Great⁸-grandmother, Deborah (Crow) Lothrop, married, July 24, 1715, died after 1754.
8. Great⁹-grandfather, Ephraim⁸ Avery, born in Truro, Mass., April 22, 1713, died in Brooklyn, Conn., Oct. 20, 1754. Great⁹-grandmother, Deborah⁸ (Lothrop) Avery, born in Norwich, Jan. 9, 1716-17, died in Highlands, N. Y., Oct. 4, 1777. See *Avery Family*.
9. Great¹⁰-grandfather, Ephraim⁹ Avery, born in Brooklyn, Conn., April 13, 1741, died in Rye, N. Y., Nov. 5, 1776. Great¹⁰-grand-

* Bolton's *History of the Protestant Episcopal Church of Westchester County, N.Y.*

- mother, Hannah⁴ (Platt) Avery, born 1737, died in Rye, N. Y., May 13, 1776.
10. Great-grandfather, John William⁸ Avery, born in Rye, May 24, 1767, died in New York, 1799. Great-grandmother, Sarah⁶ (Fairchild) Avery, born in Strafford, Conn., Feb. 28, 1773, died in New York, May 6, 1837. *See Fairchild Family.*
 11. Grandfather, Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery, born in New York, Jan. 1, 1797, died in New York, July 24, 1832. Grandmother, Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery, born in New York, April 24, 1804, died in Jersey City, N. J., June 26, 1888. *See Park Family.*
 12. Father, Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery, born in New York, March 17, 1822, died in New York, Aug. 11, 1904. Mother, Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, born in New York, Dec. 1, 1825, died in Hartford, Conn., April 29, 1911.
 13. Samuel Putnam¹² Avery, eldest son of Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery, and Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 7, 1847. Died in Hartford, Conn., Sept. 25, 1920.

THE PARK FAMILY
OF
CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS

RICHARD¹ PARK

1635

AUTHORITIES CITED

For the following record of the Park Family in America, see:

- Avery Family in America, Dedham Branch*, pp. 175-6.
Barry's History of Framingham, Massachusetts.
Bond's Genealogies and History of Watertown, Massachusetts, pp. 190, 198, 210, 244, 302, 323, 328, 383-4, 422, 442.
Brewster Genealogy, Vol. I, pp. 26-7.
Connecticut in the Revolution.
Denison's Westerly and its Witnesses, pp. 66-75.
Drake's Dictionary of American Biography, p. 687.
Drake's History of Newton, Massachusetts.
Genealogy of the Cornell Family.
Genealogy of the Stantons.
General Register, Society of Colonial Wars, 1899-1902.
Historical Register of Narragansett, Vol. I, p. 217.
Jackson's History of Newton, Massachusetts, pp. 382-4.
Mackenzie's Colonial Families, U. S. A., Vol. VI.
Narragansett Historical Register.
National Cyclopaedia of American History.
New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, October, 1904.
Paige's History of Cambridge, Massachusetts, pp. 623, 685-6.
Parke and Parks of Massachusetts, pp. 30, 34-5, 37-8, 44-6, 57-8, 79-80.
Pedigree No. 113, generations 10, 11 and 12, N. Y. Genealogical and Biographical Record, Vol. LI, pp. 84-7.
Prominent Families of New York, 1898.
Records of the Colony of Rhode Island.
Savage's Genealogical Dictionary of New England, Vol. I, p. 433; Vol. II, p. 53; Vol. III, pp. 346-7.
Some Account of the Park Family, pp. 7-9, 12-14, 20-25.
The Mayflower Descendant, Vol. II, p. 115; Vol. III, p. 192; Vol. IV, p. 128.
Valentine's Manual, for year 1793.
Vital Records of Newton, Massachusetts, pp. 292, 350.
Vital Records of Rhode Island, by Arnold, Vol. V, Charlestown, pp. 12, 24.
Vital Records of Westerly, R. I.
Westerly Church Records, 1751.
Year Book, Sons of the Revolution, 1909.

NEWTON, MASSACHUSETTS

The settlement of Newtown (Cambridge), began in 1631. Its town records were commenced in November, 1632, and the proprietors' records, in 1635.

The origin of the name "Newtown," or rather its application to the town, grew out of the facts and circumstances attending its first settlement.

Charlestown, Boston, Dorchester, Watertown, Roxbury, and other towns, had become settled, when, for greater security from the Indians, it was deemed necessary for the safety of the Colony, to have one fortified town.

For this purpose, the Governor, Deputy Governor and Assistants examined several places, and finally decided to build the *New-town* on the north side of Charles river, at the place now occupied by Harvard College, with the intention, or expectation, on the part of many, that it was to be the capital of the Colony, and to be fortified at the common expense.

In July, 1631, "The Court ordered that there be levied out of the several plantations, £30, for making the Creek from Charles river to the New Town."

In 1631, a thatched house in Boston took fire from the chimney and was burnt down; whereat Deputy Governor Dudley observed that "in our *new-town*, intended to be built this Summer, we have ordered that no man there shall build his chimney with wood, or cover his house with thatch."

In February, 1632, "The Court ordered a rate of £60 to be levied out of the several plantations, towards making a palisado about the *New Town*."

Thus it was spoken, written and recorded; the name grew with the project. The fortification was actually made, and the fosse was dug around the *New Town*, enclosing upwards of a thousand



PARK COAT OF ARMS

“VIRTUS”

“*Gules on a pale argent three bucks heads cabossed of the field, is borne by the name of Parke and was confirmed to Tho. Parke of Wisbeach in the Isle of Ely in Cambridgeshire by Sir Willm Segar, Garter King at Arms 1618.*”

Guillims Display of Heraldry.

acres, "paled in with one general fence, which was about one and a half miles in length; it is one of the neatest and best compacted towns in New England, having many fair structures, with many handsome contrived streets; the inhabitants, most of them, are very rich. Half a mile westward of the Town, is a great pond (Fresh Pond), which is divided between Newtown and Watertown, on the north side of Charles river."*

At the General Court, May, 1634, those of Newtown complained of straitness for want of land, especially of meadow land, and desired leave of the Court to look out either for enlargement or removal.

They soon obtained very large grants of land, north and south. On the south side of Charles river, they obtained nearly all of what is now Brighton and Newton. This tract was first called "The south side of Charles river," and sometimes "Nonantum" (the Indian name), and after religious meetings were regularly held on the south side of the river, about 1634, it was called "*Cambridge village*," until 1679.

When Harvard College was established in 1638, the General Court "ordered the Newtown should henceforward be called Cambridge," "in compliment to the place where so many of the civil and clerical fathers of New England had been educated."

"On the 28th of October, 1646, the Rev. John Eliot, at the northeast part of Cambridge Village, made his first attempt to christianize the Indians."

In 1662, a parish line was established by the General Court, between Cambridge and Cambridge Village, about four miles from Cambridge meeting-house.

On the 27th of August, 1679, Cambridge Village was set off from Cambridge, and organized as an independent town, "by virtue of an order of the General Court." After which it was more often called "New Cambridge," until 1691. This name was not given by the Court, nor is there any vote in relation to it upon the Town or Court records. It appears to have been

* Wood's description, made in the summer of 1633.

assumed by the leading inhabitants, and generally acquiesced in by the public. Captain Thomas Prentice, John Ward, Ebenezer Stone, and other leading men, wrote the name, *New Cambridge* in their deeds and other papers, dated between 1679 and 1691. John Ward was chosen Deputy to the General Court, from New Cambridge, in 1689, and so entered on the Court records. This change of name from "Cambridge Village" to "New Cambridge," by the public was gradual; its use never became general and produced some confusion, and the inhabitants petitioned the Court more than once, to give the town a name.

On the 8th December, 1691, the General Court passed the following order. "In answer to the petition of the inhabitants of Cambridge Village, sometime called New Cambridge, lying on the south side of Charles river, being granted to be a township, praying that a name may be given unto the said town,—It is ordered, that it be henceforth called 'New Town'," very naturally and properly restoring the ancient name, which was discontinued by the Court in 1638, for the reason already stated.

The name stands upon the Court records in two words, one syllable each, precisely as it does upon the Court records of 1631. This form of writing it was gradually altered to one word with two syllables. All the town clerks of Newtown followed the Court's order in the spelling of the name, until 1766, when Judge Fuller was town clerk; he always spelt it on the Town records, "*Newton*." There was no vote-usage in the town, and the public had been seventy-five years preparing the way for him to assume the responsibility of making the contraction, by omitting the "*w*" from the last syllable.

The first settlers of Cambridge Village did not come into the place in a body, as was the case in the first settlement of many of our New England towns, but they came in, one after another, from England and from the neighboring towns so gradually, that from the first permanent settler in 1639, to its separation from Cambridge in 1679, a period of forty years, only forty-two freemen came into the village as permanent settlers. During those years, thirty of their sons had arrived at, or past the age of

twenty-one years; five of these settlers had deceased, and two removed. So that at the erection of the village into an independent town, in 1679, the number of freemen was about sixty-five.

The first considerable accession to the New Town (Cambridge) appears to have been in August, 1632, when the Braintree company, which had begun to settle at Mount Wallaston, by order of the Court, removed to the New Town. These were Mr. Hooker's company; their names, forty-seven in number, are entered in the proprietors' records in 1632. It appears evident that these settlers entertained strong hopes that the New Town would be the metropolis of the Colony; that the canal from Charles river to the town, would give commercial facility; the fortification, safety from enemies; and the beauty and regularity of its streets, would be strong inducements for emigrants to settle within its walls. But, however sanguine they may have been of securing these advantages, it soon became more and more apparent that however beautiful their new town may have been in theory, in practice their canal and palisado were worthless. The shoal waters of the river and the canal were no match for the deep water and easy access of Boston harbor.

In May, 1634, they complained to the Court of straitness for want of land and desired leave to look out either for enlargement or removal, which was granted; whereupon they sent men to examine Ipswich, the Merrimack and Connecticut rivers. The report of their messengers who went to examine Connecticut, was very flattering, and produced a strong influence among them; and at the session of the Court in September, they asked leave to remove to Connecticut. This question of their removal was a very exciting one, and was debated by the Court many days. On taking the vote, it appeared that the Assistants were opposed to their removal, and the Deputies were in favor of it. Upon this grew a great difference between the Governor and Assistants, and the Deputies. "So when they could proceed no further, the whole Court agreed to keep a day of humiliation in all the congregations," and Mr. Cotton, at the desire of the Court, preached a sermon that had great influence in settling the question. The

public sentiment, at that time, appeared to be against their removal. Boston and Watertown had offered them enlargement, and the congregation of Newtown accepted these offers, and concluded not to remove.

This enlargement of lands given by Boston and Watertown, to quiet Newtown, were what is now Brookline, Brighton and Newton, excepting only the special grants to individuals.

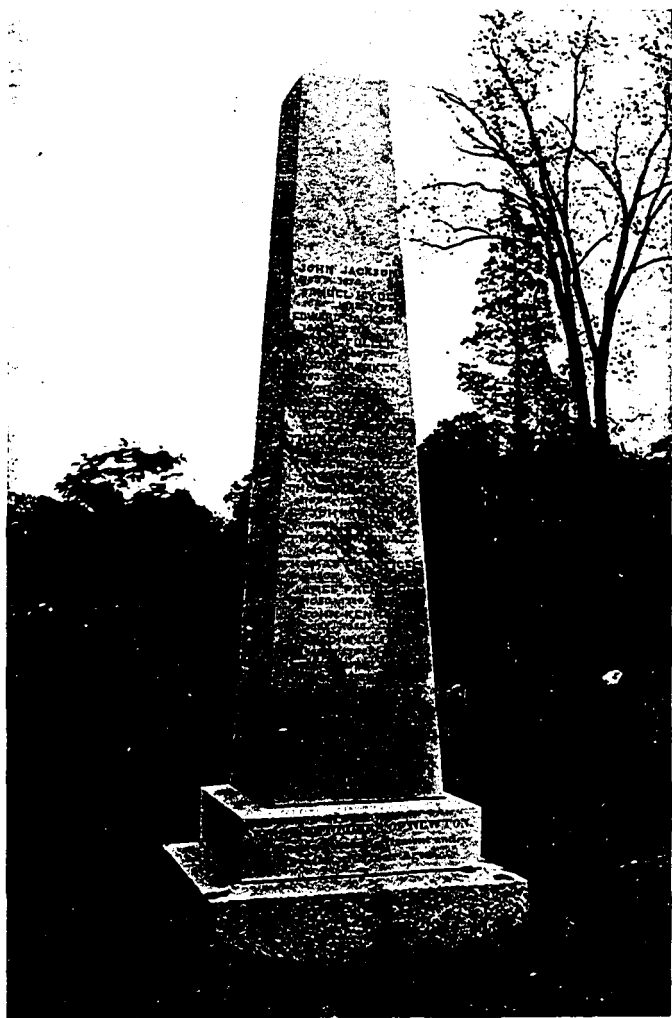
At the second Court of Assistants, September 7th, 1630, "The Court ordered that the town upon Charles river be called Watertown." This was almost two months after their arrival in New England. The place was then an unexplored wilderness, and they claimed a large tract on the south side of Charles river, all of which they gave up to Newtown, except a strip two hundred rods long and sixty rods wide, enough to protect their fishing privileges, afterwards called the Wear lands. *"All the rest of the ground on that side of the river, the Court ordered, was to belong to Newtown."* This grant, "all the rest," was the earliest made to Newtown on the south side of the river.

The original grants of land to Jeremiah Dummer, Thomas Mayhew, Rev. Thomas Shepard, Joseph Cooke and Major Samuel Shepard, passed into the hands of Gregory Cooke, Edward Jackson, Richard Park, John Fuller and Captain Isaac Williams, who were the first actual settlers thereon.

Elder Wiswall, John Spring, Joseph Bartlett, Captain Isaac Williams, and others, neglected to record the deeds of their farms, nor is there anything upon record to show how Richard¹ Park, Senior, came by the six hundred acres abutting northerly upon Charles river, which he willed to his only son Thomas²; nor any record of the homestead of Rev. John Eliot, Jr.

In a division of lands in 1647, Richard¹ Park had eleven acres in Cambridge Village, bounded west by Mr. Jackson's land, and the highway to Dedham was laid out through it in 1648. He had moved to Newtown in 1647.

1647. "Samuel and Jonathan Hyde bought forty acres land bounded by Richard¹ Park north, late Mayhew's farm west, Dedham high-way southeast, and Common lands southwest."



NEWTON MONUMENT

In 1657, "Mr. Edward Jackson, John Jackson, Richard¹ Park and Samuel Hyde were appointed a committee to lay out and settle the highways, in reference to the proprietors at that end of the town, otherwise than by crossing upon any part of the Commons, as need shall require."

"In 1661, during the contest between the village and Cambridge, Richard¹ Park sent a petition to the Court praying to retain his connection with the Cambridge church, because a parish line was established by the Court between Cambridge and the village, about four miles from Cambridge Meeting house."*

In 1663, Richard¹ Park was "released from training on account of his age." In May, 1664, he sold to James Keebe, a horse, valued at £6, for which he was to build a frame house.

Richard¹ Park's house was near the Commons in Cambridge. The very ancient dwelling house which was pulled down about 1800, was supposed to have been built by him.

Near the spot where the Meeting House of the First Church originally stood, a marble pillar was erected September 1, 1852, with appropriate inscriptions on the four faces, in commemoration of the first inhabitants of the town and recording their names. On the West Side, the name of RICHARD PARK, 1647-1665, appears.

1. RICHARD¹ PARK

1. RICHARD¹ PARK was born in England about 1602, and sailed from London in the ship *Defence*, August 10, 1635. He arrived at Boston, Mass., October 3, 1635, bringing with him his wife Margery and three children, and settled in Cambridge, Mass.

The "*Original Lists*," edited by John Camden Hotten, under

* The Cambridge church owned a farm in Billerica, of one thousand acres, and other property. In 1648 it was "Voted," by the church, "that every person that from time to time hereafter removed from the church, did thereby resign their interest to the remaining part of the church property."

This vote may have been the reason of his sending that petition to the Court. Jackson's *History of Newton*, p. 382.

"Register of the names of ye Pasinger wch Passed from ye Port of London for on whole yeare Endinge at X^{mas} 1635," page 105, has the following:

Xjo die Julij 1635

Theis vnder written names are to be transported to New England imbarqued in the Defence of Lndon Edward Bostock Mr p Certificate of his Comformitie in Religion & that he is no Subsedy man.

A miller RICHARD PERK	33
MARGERY PERK	40
ISABELL PERK	7 yeres
ELIZABETH PERK	4

There was also one son, Thomas², although his name does not appear on the passenger list.

It is not known when or where Mrs. Margery Park died, but "after Sept. 1, 1656," Richard¹ Park married, as his second wife, Sarah (Collier) Brewster, born —, 1615. She was a daughter of William¹ and Jane Collier,* of Duxbury, Mass., and widow of Love Brewster.†

Richard¹ Park died in 1665? By his will, dated Dec. 5, 1665, and witnessed by Elder Wiswall and Hugh Mason, he bequeathed to his only son Thomas² Park all his houses and six hundred acres of land, after the death of his wife Sarah.‡ The rest of the property was equally divided between the two daughters above mentioned.

By the inventory of his estate, dated 19-8-1665, taken by John Sherman and John Spring, "the dwelling house, barn, outhouses and six hundred acres of land adjoining, whereof twenty acres is broken up," is appraised at £660, and the twenty-nine acres elsewhere at £100. The whole amount of inventory was £972.

*See Nathaniel Warren.

† Love Brewster married, May 15, 1634, Sarah Collier, and died, leaving three children. His will was dated Oct. 1, 1650.

‡ The following entry will be found in the First Book of the Plymouth First Church Records, Part III, p. 22. The page is dated 1691 and under the heading, "Members dyed," is the record: "Mrs. Sarah Parke, widow, April 26th, in her 76th yeare."

Children of Richard¹ and his first wife, Margery (Crane?) Park:—

2. i. Isabell², born in England, —, about 1625. Married, —, 1648? Francis², born in England, —, 1625, son of John¹ and — (—?) Whitmore of England. Isabell² (Park) Whitmore died March 31, 1665, leaving seven children. Francis² Whitmore married, second, Nov. 10, 1666, Margaret Harty, born —, daughter of — Harty. Francis² Whitmore died Oct. 12, 1685, at Cambridge. His widow died March 1, 1686. Francis² Whitmore by his second wife, Margaret Harty had three children.
Francis² Whitmore came to America probably in 1630, and had established his residence at Cambridge prior to 1648. He owned property in Cambridge, near the Plains, Charlestown, near the Menetomic river, also in Medford and Livingston. His house stood on the dividing line between Lexington and Cambridge, and is mentioned in the Act of Division.* He served in King Philip's War; was Selectman and Constable in 1668 and 1682.
- + 3. ii. Thomas[†], born in England, —, 1628-9. *See forward.*
4. iii. Elizabeth², born in England, —, 1631. Married —, Edward Winship of Cambridge as his second wife. She died Sept. 19, 1690. He had children by his first and also by his second wife.

3. THOMAS² PARK

3. THOMAS² PARK, only son of Richard¹ and Margery (—?) Park, was born in England, —, 1628-9, and came to America with his parents, in the ship *Defence*, arriving October 3, 1635; he married, December 1, 1653, Abigail², born May 2, 1637, daughter of Edward¹† and Jane (Wilkinson) Dix of Watertown, Mass. Thomas² Park died August 11, 1690. His widow Margery (—?) Park died February 3, 1691.

Dec. 1658. "Joseph Cooke, of Cambridge, to John Fuller, for £60. seven hundred and fifty acres land north and west by Charles river, the winding part of the river west, east by Thomas²

* Brook's *History of Medford; Whitmore Genealogy*, p. 13.

† Thomas Park was a witness in Court, June, 1679, then aged 50, showing that he was born 1629. Bond's *History of Watertown*, p. 866.

‡ See Dix Family.

Park, and south by Samuel Shepard's farm, being a straight line between."

1672. "Jeremiah Dummer, of Boston, to Gregory Cooke, one hundred and twelve acres of land, partly in Cambridge (Newtown), and partly in Watertown, with house and barn thereon, for £145; highway east, Edward Jackson and David Bacon south, Charles river north, and Thomas² Park west."

In 1678, a petition was presented, remonstrating against the imposition of a tax, "amounting to the sum of three County rates, without our knowledge or consent, which we humbly conceive is very harsh proceeding." Thomas² Park, Senior, was one of the signers.

"Thirteen years after his father's decease (inventory dated 19, 8, 1665), Thomas² Park bought the life interest* of the widow for £45, 15 s. Her release is dated Sept. 26, 1678, in which she calls herself of Duxbury, in the Colony of New Plymouth, relict of Richard Parke, late of Camb. Village."

Thomas² Park settled upon the 600 acres left him by his father, and his house was near the Bemis' Mills on the south side of the Charles river.

Thomas² Park died August 11, 1690, aged about 62. His estate was divided, Oct. 3, 1691, among the heirs; there being seven hundred and twenty-two acres of land, and part of a corn mill upon Smelt brook, erected by John Spring. The first grist mill in the town was built upon Smelt's brook, near the center of the town. Thomas² Park's inventory was dated September 30, 1690, and was witnessed by William Bond, Isaac Williams and Nathan Fiske. The estate was finally settled March 12, 1693, and the following children are named (Thomas² having died), viz: John³, Richard³, Edward³, Jonathan³, Abigail³ Fiske, Sarah³ Knapp, Rebecca³ Sanger, Elizabeth³ Park.

Thomas² Park, Capt. Isaac Williams, John Ward, Jr. and John Spring, Jr., each became quarter owners. In the division of Thomas² Park's estate, in 1693, his quarter was set off to his son Edward³ Park.

* See bequest to Sarah Park.

Children of Thomas² and Margery (—?) Park:—

5. i. Thomas², born in Cambridge (Newton or Watertown), Nov. 2, 1654. Died Aug. 28, 1681.
- + 6. ii. John², born in Cambridge, Sept. 6, 1656. *See forward.*
7. iii. Abigail², born in Cambridge, March 3, 1658. Married, Dec. 9, 1679, John², born Nov. 20, 1655, son of John² and Sarah (Wyeth) Fiske, of Watertown. "May 23, 1697, John² Fiske and wife Abigail, for £10, 10 sh. sold to John Ward of Newton, 13½ acres in Newton, probably inherited from her father." Abigail² (Park) Fiske died —? She had by John² Fiske eight children. John² Fiske married, second, Jan., 1699–1700, Hannah Richards, who died in 1714. John² Fiske, died Jan. 6, 1718. His will was dated June 6, 1709, and proved June 23, 1718.
8. iv. Edward², born in Cambridge, April 8, 1661. Married, March 13, 1694–5, Martha², born Jan. 12, 1670–1; she was a daughter of Nathan² and Elizabeth (—?) Fiske. Edward² Park died in Newton, March 1, 1745; he had four children by Martha² Fiske.
9. v. Richard², born in Newton, Dec. 21, 1663. Married —? Sarah King of Cambridge Farms. She died May 16, 1727, leaving four children. Richard² Park removed to Concord and married, second, Elizabeth Billings.
 "He took the house his father last dwelt in, with the barn and orchard, and all the land adjoining within the fence, which includes the new as well as the old field, with the land east where the old gate stood."
10. vi. Sarah², born in Newton, Jan. 21, 1666. Married, Aug. 4, 1686, John Knapp, Jr.; he was a son of John and Sarah (Young) Knapp of Newton. Sarah² (Park) Knapp died in 1727. John Knapp, Jr., died in 1733. They had two children.
11. vii. Rebecca², born in Watertown, April 13, 1668. Married —? 1684–5, John² Sanger, born Sept. 6, 1657; he was a son of Richard¹* and Mary (Rannals?) Sanger of Watertown. John² Sanger died —, Jan., 1705. They had six children.
 "Administration on the estate of John² Sanger was granted Jan. 22, 1704–5, to his widow and her brother, Jonathan² Park of Newton."
12. viii. Jonathan², born in Watertown, Aug. 27, 1670. Married,

* Richard¹ Sanger, aged 18, embarked at Southampton, England, April 1638, in the *Confidence*, of London, John Jobson, Master. "To him and his two sons, with three others, was entrusted, during King Philip's War, the charge of guarding the mill at Watertown." Richard¹ Sanger died Aug. 20, 1691.

March 18, 1689, Ann^a Spring, born Sept. 21, 1671; she was a daughter of Henry^a* and Mehitable (Bartlett) Spring, of Watertown. Ann^a (Spring) Park died April 27, 1691. Jonathan^a Park married, second, Abigail —? who died April 10, 1713. He married, third, April 27, 1715, Hannah^a† Kembball, born June 8, 1681. She was a daughter of John^a and Hannah (Bartlett) Kembball, of Watertown. Jonathan^a Park died Jan. 23, 1718-19. His will, dated Jan. 12, 1718-19, mentions wife Hannah and six children.

13. ix. Elizabeth^a, born in Watertown (or Newton), July 28, 1679. Married, —? 1698, John^a Holland, born April 7, 1674; he was a son of Nathaniel^a‡ and Sarah (—?) Holland, of Watertown. They had eleven children.

6. JOHN^a PARK

6. JOHN^a PARK, second son of Thomas^a and Abigail^a (Dix) Park, was born in Newtown, Mass., Sept. 6, 1656. Married, second§, April 5, 1694, Elizabeth Miller, of Watertown. John^a Park died March 21, 1717-18.

Children of John^a and his second wife, Elizabeth (Miller) Park:—

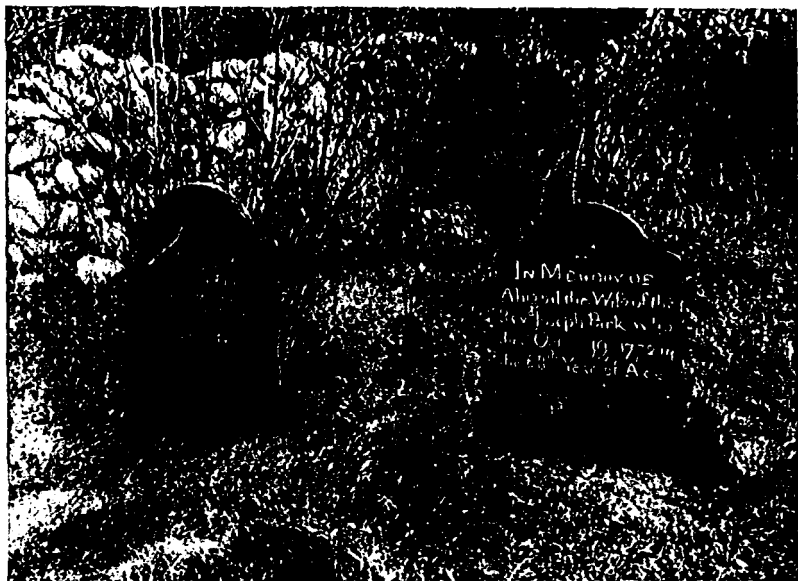
14. i. Elizabeth^a, born in Newtown, Feb. 24, 1695. Died young.
15. ii. John^a, born in Newtown, Dec. 20, 1696. Married Esther —? and had one son, born May 1, 1719. Esther (—) Park died —? John^a Park married, second, July 14, 1720, Abigail Lawrence, born July 13, 1701; she was a daughter of Samuel and Abigail Lawrence of Newton. John^a Park died May 21, 1747. Abigail (Lawrence) Park's will is dated Jan. 3, 1757. John^a and Abigail (Lawrence) Park had six children.
16. iii. Solomon^a, born in Newton, Oct. 16, 1699. Married, June 21, 1722, Lydia Lawrence, baptized July 12, 1702; she was a daughter of Samuel and Abigail Lawrence of Newton.

* John^a Spring, aged 45, father of Henry^a, embarked, April 10, 1634, with his wife Elinor, aged 46 and four children, at Ipswich, England, in the *Elizabeth*, William Andrews, Master.

† Henry^a Kembball, aged 44, grandfather of Hannah^a Kembball, and his wife Susanna, aged 35, and three children also came in the *Elizabeth*, William Andrews, master, with John Spring and wife.

‡ "It was ordered that the estate of Nathaniel Holland be disposed of between John Holland, Sarah Phillips and John Ormes." Bond's *History of Watertown*, p. 794.

§ Bond's *History of Watertown, Mass.*, p. 384.



TOMBSTONE OF REV. JOSEPH PARK

Solomon⁴ Park moved to Holliston, Mass., before 1741, where he died, Jan. 2, 1754. Solomon⁴ and Lydia (Lawrence) Park had six children.

17. iv. Elizabeth⁴, born in Newton, Feb. 27, 1701. Married, Nov. 30, 1720, Joseph⁴ Morse, born Aug. 19, 1693; he was a son of Joseph⁴ and Elizabeth (Sawtel) Morse*, of Watertown.
18. v. Abigail⁴, born in Newton, April 20, 1702. Married, June 16, 1724, Nathaniel, born 1695?, son of Samuel and Rebecca (Gardner) Whittemore, of Cambridge.
- +19. vi. Joseph⁴, born in Newton, March 12, 1705. *See forward.*
20. vii. Mary⁴†, born in Newton, March 17, 1708. Married, July 13, 1727, Isaac Sanger.

19. JOSEPH⁴ PARK

19. JOSEPH⁴† PARK, third son of John³ and Elizabeth (Miller) Park, was born in Newton, Mass., March 12, 1705 (Harvard, B. A., 1720, M. A., 1724). Married, June 15, 1732, Abigail Greene, born 1704, daughter of — Greene. Abigail (Greene) Park died Oct. 19, 1772. Joseph⁴ Park died March 1, 1777.

Joseph⁴ Park, third son of John³ and Elizabeth (Miller) Park, studied for the ministry, was ordained 1730, and moved to Westerly, R. I., in 1732, to which place he was appointed Missionary to the Indians and such English as would attend. He entered his new field of labor in 1733, occupying a meeting-house on a lot of land given by George Ninegret, chief sachem of the Indians. The lot comprised twenty acres and was situated near the post-road in the eastern part of the present town. His congregation came from Westerly, Charlestown, and Narragansett. This occurred in 1733, before the division of the town

* Joseph² Morse, aged 24 years, embarked at Ipswich, Eng., April, 1634, in the ship *Elizabeth*, Wm. Andrews, master. His name is on the earliest list of proprietors of Watertown, and he was admitted freeman May 6, 1635. He was the eldest son of Joseph¹ and Dorothy Morse, who came to America, probably a year or two later than his son, and settled in Ipswich. He married Hester, daughter of John¹ and Elizabeth Peirce of Watertown. Joseph² Morse died March 4, 1690-1. Bond's *History of Watertown*, p. 371.

† A daughter, Deliverance, is not mentioned. The Weston Church Records say, "Deliverance and Mary, adults, drs. of John Park, were bap. Sept. 14, 1718." In 1723, Deliverance went to Killingly, Conn. Bond's *History of Watertown*, p. 385.

‡ See *Avery, Fairchild and Park Families*, about life in Westerly, R. I., pp. 97-101.

of Westerly. Rev. Mr. Park took up his residence near the center of the town (now in Charlestown near the boundary line), as being the best location near the tribe for whose benefit he was sent. His house was on an elevation near the road, north side, and the meeting-house in which he officiated was not far distant.

The following inscriptions are from old gravestones in the old graveyard on the north side of the post-road just out of Westerly going to Charlestown, a few rods east of the residence of Christopher Rathbun, near where the shore road enters the post-road. The meeting-house or church is now gone.

IN MEMORY OF

REV. JOSEPH PARK, WHO DIED MARCH 1, 1777 IN THE 72D YEAR OF HIS AGE AND THE 45TH YEAR OF HIS MINISTRY. HE WAS A FAITHFUL MINISTER OF THE GOSPEL, A GREAT PATRIOT, A KIND HUSBAND, A TENDER PARENT, A GREAT FRIEND TO THE WIDOW AND ORPHAN AND FATHERLESS, AND WAS AN EXCELLENT NEIGHBOR.

IN MEMORY OF

ABIGAIL THE WIFE OF THE REV. JOSEPH PARK WHO DIED OCT. 19TH 1772 IN THE 68TH YEAR OF AGE. A FAITHFUL WIFE, A TENDER MOTHER, A KIND NEIGHBOR, A COMPASSIONATE AND STEADFAST FRIEND, AND AN EXCELLENT CHRISTIAN:

JOSEPH⁴ PARK'S WILL

In the name of God, Amen: On the fifteenth day of January, one thousand seven hundred and seventy four, I, Joseph⁴ Park, of Charlestown in the County of Kings County and Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations in America, Clerk, being of perfect mind and memory, praise be to almighty God, taking into consideration, my frailty and mortality, Do make and ordain this, my last will and Testament, in manor and form following:

First of All, I commend my Soul to God in Jesus Christ, my Maker and only Redeemer, and my Body to the Earth to be decently buried there to rest in hope of a glorious Resurrection, through the alone merits of my Redeemer.

And, concerning the worldly Estate, which God hath given me, after all my just Debts are paid; my Will is that they should be disposed of as followeth.

Imprimis. I give to my beloved Son Benjamin⁴ Park (excepting what I shall hereafter give to my Son John⁴ Park), all my Lands and Buildings, Eastward of the Land already given by Deed of Gift to my son John⁴

Park; Beginning at the Country Road, moving northerly upon the Line of the Land given to my son John^s Park aford^{as}, until it strikes the Line of the Land, which I give by Deed of gift to my Said Son Benjamin^s Park, then Easterly till it comes to the path between my Land and the Land now belonging to Daniel Saunders, then turning upon that Road, 'till it comes to the mark, a Tree at the corner of the Land which I Sold to the Widow Ann Saunders, from thence to the Westerly Line of the Land which I gave to John Bartlet, then runing upon that line 'till it comes to the Country Road aford^{as}, then runing on Said Country Road 'till it comes to the first mentioned bound; with all Priviledges and appurtenance there unto, belonging to Him, his Heirs and assigns forever.

Item. I give to my beloved Son John^s Park, all my Lands lying Westerly of the Lands, before mentioned, given to my son Benjamin^s Park, bounded Northerly upon the Land of Isaac Ross, Westerly upon the Land of Humphrey Taylor and William Crandall, South Westerly upon the Land I sold to Samuel Champlin^s, Southerly upon the Land of Joseph Wilcock, until it comes unto the Land aford-Said given to my son Benjamin, and also twelve acres of Wood Land, beginning at the aford said mark'd Tree at the Land I Sold to the Widow Anna Saunders, runing Westerly to the north Easterly corner of the Pond, call'd the drain Pond, then upon the north Side of said Pond untill a north Line unto the aford Said Path between my land and the Land of Daniel Saunders, Shall make the Complement of Said twelve acres; and also a parcel of Land, beginning at the northwest corner of my Orchard Wall, runing with Said Wall easterly, and then in a Direct Line a Rod and half beyond a single white Oak Tree, then Southerly so far as a parallel Line with the first, comes to a pecked Rock near my cow Yard Wall, from thence to the first mentioned Corner, together with five acres of Marsh, which I bought of Jerimiah Angel with all the priviledge and appurtenance there unto belonging, and also an equal priviledge in my barn to Him, his Heirs and assigns forever.

Item. I Give to my beloved Daughter Ann Pendleton, to her Heirs or Assigns, forty pounds Lawfull Money to be paid equally by my two Sons Benjamin^s and John^s Park, within two years after my Decease.

Lastly, All my moveable Estate beside what is given away by word of mouth, I give to my three grandsons, Jonathan Green Park, Joseph Park and Thomas Park, who bare up the names of my three preitous Sons of Zion deceased, And of this, my last Will and Testament, I make and ordain my two Sons Benjamin and John Park to be my Executors, disanulling all other and former Testament, in confirmation of all which I Sign & Seal

In presence of
Stanton Yorke
Ezekiel Gavit
James Babcock, Junior.

Joseph Park.

* See Eunice Champlin.

The original will, formerly in the possession of Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery, great-grand daughter, is now, 1920, owned by the Westerly, R. I., Historical Society.

Children of Joseph⁴ and Abigail (Greene) Park:—

21. i. Jonathan Greene⁵, born in Westerly, R. I., Oct. 30, 1733.
- +22. ii. Benjamin⁵, born in Westerly, R. I., Nov. 1, 1735. *See forward.*
23. iii. Joseph⁵, born in Westerly, R. I., Nov. 1, 1735.
24. iv. Thomas⁵, born in Westerly, —, 1738.
25. v. Anne⁵, born in Westerly, —, 1739. Married, Sept. 7, 1758, Peleg Pendleton of Stonington, Conn., born July 9, 1733. He died July 10, 1810. She died March 20, 1817. Peleg and Anne⁵ (Park) Pendleton had eleven children. *History of Stonington*, p. 532.
26. vi. John⁵, born in Westerly, 1742. Married, Nov. 4, 1772, Abigail Chapman of Charlestown, R. I. She died March 4, 1790. He died in Searsport, Me., 1812. John⁵ and Abigail (Chapman) Park had nine children.
27. vii. Henry⁵, born in Westerly, 1744.
28. viii. Samuel⁵, born in Westerly, 1747. Died Sept. 29, 1747.
29. ix. Mary⁵, born in Westerly.

22. BENJAMIN⁵ PARK

22. BENJAMIN⁵ PARK^{*}, second son of Joseph⁴ and Abigail (Greene) Park, was born November 1, 1735, in Westerly, R. I. Married, December 4, 1757, Hannah Stanton, born June 1, 1739; she was a daughter of James Stanton and Jemima (Shaw) York, of Westerly.

Benjamin⁵ Park died June 17, 1775, at Bunker Hill. His widow, died December —, 1800.

Children of Benjamin⁵ and Hannah Stanton (York) Park:—

30. i. Mary⁶, was born in Westerly, Sept. 8, 1758. Died in Parkevale, Pa.

* April the 11th, 1756 Appointed Wednesday, ye 14th of this Instant as a day of Fasting and Prayer, to Humble ourselves before God, to Implore his gracious presence with, and blessing to, our young Brethren, Joseph Park, Jun., Lieutenant; Benjamin Park and Thomas Park, Sergeants; and William Gavitt, Corporal, all who offered their Desires in writing to this Society (of which they all are members); and we pray that God of his Infinite Mercy will hear and answer . . . as also that God would bless our army in general, who are going forth against our Enemies. Denison's *Westerly and its Witnesses*, p. 72.

31. ii. Jonathan Greene^a, was born in Westerly, March 5, 1760. Died March 25, 1761.
32. iii. Joseph^a, was born in Charlestown, R. I., Nov. 13, 1763.
- +33. iv. Benjamin^a, was born in Charlestown, Sept. 16, 1765. See forward.
34. v. Thomas^a, was born in Charlestown, Sept. 1, 1767. Married, Dec. 4, 1800, Eunice Champlin, born in Newport, R. I., Sept. 18, 1768; she was a daughter of William and Sarah (Pendleton) Champlin. Thomas^a Park died in Pennsylvania, Nov. 16, 1842. His widow, Eunice (Champlin) Park died Nov. 19, 1857. They had eight children.
35. vi. John^a, was born in Charlestown, Aug. 29, 1769.
36. vii. Hannah Stanton^a, was born in Charlestown, July 12, 1771. Died —, 1831, in Harrisburg, Pa.
37. viii. Henry^a, was born in Charlestown, Sept. 12, 1774. Died —, 1830.
38. ix. Susan^a.

Whereas the REV. JOSEPH^a PARK of Charlestown in the County of Kings, presented this Assembly with a memorial setting forth that he hath ever been ready to contribute all the assistance in his power to stop his Majesty's enemies from their injurious encroachments on his dominion and just rights in America and to defend the Country. That in the year of 1756 he consented to the voluntary service of three of his sons who served in the expedition formed for the reduction of Crown Point; that when they were discharged from the service upon their return homeward, they put their clothing and other furniture to the value of £100 currency, in their chest which was unfortunately lost in the sea.

That this summer when the enemy attacked Fort William Henry [in 1758] they volunteered in the stead of officers who declined, that they did this without any consideration purely to serve their country, that he the memorialist was thereby put to considerable charge, wherefore he prays for such allowance as should be thought proper.

On consideration whereof this Assembly do vote and resolve that the sum of £100 be paid said Joseph Park out of the general Treasury, for the use of his aforesaid Sons, as an allowance for what they lost, as aforesaid, but that nothing be allowed them as officers. *Rhode Island Colonial Records*, Vol. VI, p. 119, 1758.

Denison in his *Westerly and its Witnesses* says "this good, laborious, tried and faithful man [Rev. Joseph^a Park] died at his home in Westerly in the seventy-second year of his age, and forty-fifth year of his ministry." He had nine children, three of whom distinguished themselves in the Colonial wars, viz:— Joseph^a, Jr., Benjamin^a and Thomas^a, notably at Crown Point in 1756, on Lake Champlain and Fort William Henry in 1758, on Lake George. Benjamin^a was prominently identified with the struggle of the colonies in the early days of the Revolution, marching to the relief of the troops on the Lexington Alarm, April 19th,

1775. He participated in the severe engagement at Bunker Hill, June 17th, 1775 where he was killed.

His son, Captain Benjamin^a Park, joined the patriot army, and was never heard of after the battle of Bunker Hill. Drake's *American Biography*, p. 687.

Benjamin^a Park, Captain, seven days in service. *Adj.-General's Record of Service of Connecticut Men in the War of the Revolution.*

MRS. HANNAH STANTON PARK'S PETITION FOR RELIEF^a

To the Honorable, the General Assembly of the State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, to be holden at Newport, in said State, in May, 1782.

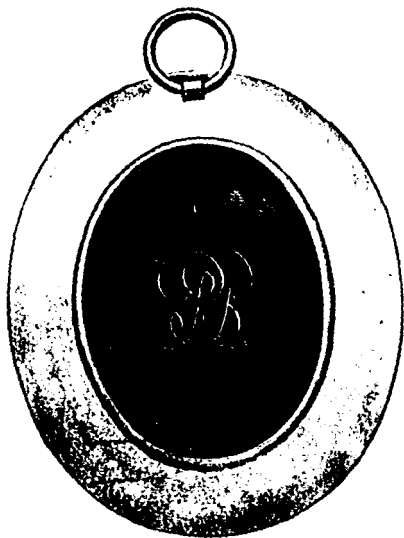
The Memorial of Hannah Stanton Park, of Charlestown (Widow), Humbly sheweth that Captain Benjamin Park, your Memorialist's late husband, being highly impressed with the Justness of the American War, and zealous at the risk of his life, of rendering his country every service in his power, did, in the beginning of the month of June, 1775, at the expense of forty pounds lawful money, arm, and otherwise equip himself; and set himself out to join his brethren in the American Army then lying against and blockading the British Army in Boston.

That he arrived among our troops some few days before our troops took possession of, and broke ground on Bunker Hill. That in pursuit of his laudable intentions he joined himself with that brave handful of men under the command of the never to be forgotten General Warren, with full purpose at the risk of his life, to contribute all in his power to defend, that important hill.

When your Memorialist's husband was in that dreadful action of the 17th of June, where he received two wounds from the enemy in the action of that day, and was, in the retreat of our army, left to suffer the cruel rage of a merciless enemy. Since which time he has not been heard of, nor found among the living, and your Memorialist having thus suffered in the cause was left a widow with eight small, fatherless children to support, without any consolation but of that of his having spilt his blood for his Country's cause.

That your Memorialist hath ever since, even beyond her ability, exerted and contributed all in her power to pay taxes to carry on the war and has of late been obliged to borrow money for that purpose, in so much that the debt she has contracted to discharge her taxes, and support her family, hath increased to a large debt upon her. Wherefore your Memorialist would pray the interposition of your Honors in her favor, and that she may have some just part of the public monies adequate to her late husband's losses in arms and necessaries in the public service. Or that your Honors would otherwise take into consideration her distressed circumstances, and grant and enact that she may in future be exempt from

^a *Narragansett Historical Register*, Vol. I, p. 217.



MINIATURE OF CAPT. BENJAMIN^e PARKE

all public taxes during the war, or such time as your Honors in your great wisdom shall think just and reasonable.

And your Memorialist as in duty bound shall ever pray.

Your Honor's Humble Servant,

H. S. Park.

Dated at Charlestown

This 20th day of April, A. D. 1782.

33. BENJAMIN⁶ PARKE

33. BENJAMIN⁶ PARKE (who added the final *e* to his name) was the third son of Benjamin⁵ and Hannah Stanton (York) Park; he was born in Charlestown, R. I., Sept. 16, 1765. Married, 1800, Susanna Maria Keens, born Dec. 2, 1776; she was a daughter of Joseph and Mary (Giles)* Keens of New York. He died, Aug. 5, 1807. She died Feb. 17, 1807.

Benjamin⁶ Parke went to New York after his mother's death, December, 1800, and engaged in the shipping business with his brother Joseph⁶. He died in New York City, August 5th, 1807, and was buried in Trinity Churchyard on Broadway, New York City, about eighteen paces north of and near the west end of the church. Susanna, his wife, was born December 2nd, 1776, and died February 17th, 1807. She is buried in Trinity Churchyard on Broadway, in the same grave with her mother, *Mary Keens, and next to her husband, Benjamin⁶ Parke.

Children of Benjamin⁶ and Susanna Maria (Keens) Parke:—

- 39. i. Susanna⁷.
- +40. ii. Hannah Anne⁷, born in New York, April 24, 1804. *See forward.*

40. HANNAH ANNE⁷ PARKE

40. HANNAH ANNE⁷ PARKE, second daughter of Benjamin⁶ and Susanna Maria (Keens) Parke, was born in New York, April 24, 1804. She was a direct descendant of Richard¹ Park,

* Mary (Giles) Keens died Feb. 17, 1792, "aged 48 years, 4 months, 17 days." Her mother, "Elizabeth Giles, wife to Gilbert Giles, Departed this Life, April ye 30th, 1766, aged 41." Trinity Churchyard Tombstones, 1920.

who settled in Cambridge, Mass., in 1635. She married, Jan. 1, 1821, Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery, born in New York, Jan. 1, 1797; he was the third son of John William⁹ and Sarah⁸ (Fairchild) Avery. *See Fairchild Family.*

Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery was a direct descendant of Richard¹ Warren, Plymouth, Mass., 1620, Thomas¹ Little, Plymouth, Mass., 1630, John⁴ Lothrop, Scituate, Mass., 1634, Thomas¹ Fairchild, Stratford, Conn., 1638, Moses¹ Wheeler, New Haven, Conn., 1641, Job¹ Lane, Malden, Mass., 1643, and William⁴ Avery, Dedham, Mass., 1650.

Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery died in New York, July 24, 1832. They had six children. *See forward, Avery Family.*

His widow, Hannah Anne (Parke) Avery married, second, Sept. 26, 1835, John Nicholas Coyne, born in Ireland, Dec. 22, 1815; died in New York, May 31, 1854. They had five children.

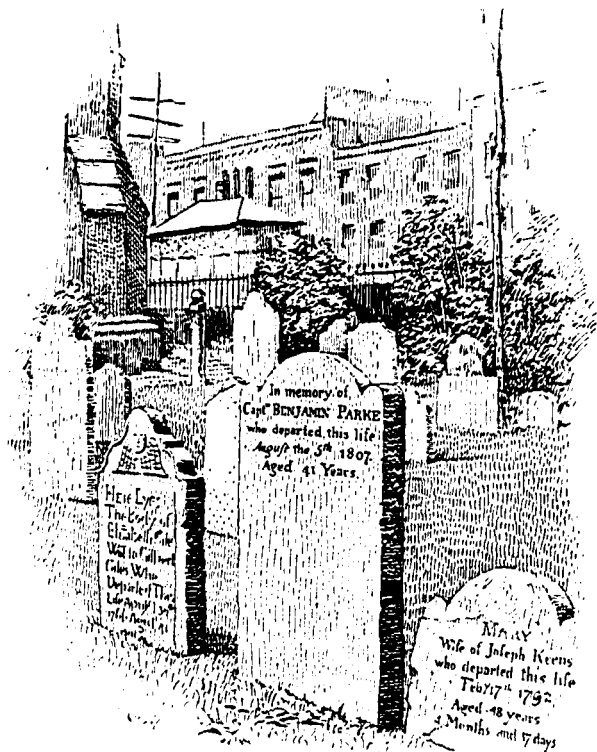
Hannah Anne (Parke) Avery-Coyne, married, third, 1858, John Owen Rouse, born in England, Aug. 14, 1818. She died in Jersey City, N. J., June 26, 1888. He died, at Bayonne, N. J., Nov. 14, 1896.

Children of Samuel Putnam¹⁰ and Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery, who are of the 8th generation in the Park line and of the 11th generation in the Avery line:—

- +41. i. Samuel Putnam¹¹, born March 17, 1822. *See forward.*
- 42. ii. Hannah Stanton¹¹, born Oct. 12, 1824; m. Charles Russell Cornell.
- 43. iii. Susan Jane¹¹, born Dec. 11, 1826; m. Stephen Avery.
- 44. iv. Benjamin Parke¹¹, born Nov. 11, 1828; m. Mary A. Fuller.
- 45. v. Mary Rebecca Halsey¹¹, born Aug. 10, 1830; m. Rev. T. De Witt Talmadge, D.D.
- 46. vi. Charles Russell Cornell¹¹, born Oct. —, 1832; d. Aug. 5, 1833.

41. SAMUEL PUTNAM¹¹ AVERY

41. SAMUEL PUTNAM¹¹ AVERY, third son of Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery and Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery, was born in New York, March 17, 1822 (M. A., Columbia University, 1896).



TOMBSTONE OF CAPT. BENJAMIN PARKE

Married, Nov. 24, 1844, Mary Ann Ogden, of New York, born Dec. 1, 1825; she was a daughter of Henry Aaron Ogden and Katharine (Conklin) Ogden. Samuel Putnam^{*11} Avery, died Aug. 11, 1904, in New York. His widow died April 29, 1911, in Hartford, Conn.

Children of Samuel Putnam^{*11} and Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery who are of the 9th generation in the Park line and of the 12th generation in the Avery line:—

47. i. Mary Henrietta^{*12}, born Oct. 4, 1845, in Brooklyn, N. Y. Died April 7, 1900, in New York.
- +48. ii. Samuel Putnam^{*12}, born Oct. 7, 1847, in Brooklyn, N. Y. See forward.
49. iii. Fanny Falconer^{*12}, born Nov. 3, 1849, in Brooklyn, N. Y. Married, Feb. 15, 1881, Rev. Manfred Philester Welcher, of Newark, N. Y., born Oct. 27, 1850 (Williams College, 1877). She died July 22, 1918, in Hartford, Conn. They had four children.
50. iv. Henry Ogden^{*12}, born Jan. 31, 1852, in Brooklyn, N. Y. Died April 30, 1890, in New York.
51. v. Emma Parke^{*12}, born Aug. 29, 1853, in Brooklyn, N. Y. Died Aug. 31, 1857, in Brooklyn, N. Y.
52. vi. Ellen Walters^{*12}, born Jan. 1, 1861, in Brooklyn, N. Y. Died March 25, 1893, in New York.

48. SAMUEL PUTNAM^{*12} AVERY

Pedigree connection with Richard¹ Park, who came to Cambridge, Mass., in 1635:

1. Great⁴-grandfather, Richard¹ Park, born in England, 1602. Died in Newton, Mass., 1665. Came over in the ship *Defence* and arrived at Boston, Mass., Oct. 3, 1635. Great⁴-grandmother, Margery (Crane?) Park, born in England, 1595. Died in Plymouth, Mass.
2. Great⁴-grandfather, Thomas² Park, born in England, 1629. Died in Cambridge, Mass., Aug. 11, 1690. Great⁴-grandmother, Abigail² (Dix) Park, born in Watertown, Mass., May 2, 1637. Died in Cambridge, Mass., Feb. 3, 1691. See *Dix Family*.
3. Great⁴-grandfather, John³ Park, born in Cambridge, Mass., Sept. 6, 1656. Died in Cambridge, Mass., March 21, 1718. Great⁴-grandmother, Elizabeth (Miller) Park, born ——. Died ——.
4. Great⁴-grandfather, Joseph⁴ Park, born in Newton, Mass., March 12, 1705. Died in Westerly, R. I., March 1, 1777. Great⁴-grandmother,

Abigail (Greene) Park, born in Westerly, R. I., 1703. Died in Westerly, R. I., Oct. 19, 1772.

5. Great²-grandfather, Benjamin⁸ Park, born in Westerly, R. I., Nov. 1, 1735. Died at Bunker Hill, June 17, 1775. Great²-grandmother, Hannah Stanton (York) Park, born in Westerly, R. I., June 1, 1739. Died December, 1800.

6. Great-grandfather, Benjamin⁸ Parke, born in Charlestown, R. I., Sept. 16, 1765. Died in New York, Aug. 5, 1807. Great-grandmother, Susanna Maria (Keens) Parke, born in New York, Dec. 2, 1776. Died in New York, Feb. 17, 1807.

7. Grandfather, Samuel Putnam⁷⁻¹⁰ Avery, born in New York, Jan. 1, 1797. Died in New York, July 24, 1832. Grandmother, Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery, born in New York, April 24, 1804. Died in Jersey City, N. J., June 26, 1888. *See Avery Family.*

8. Father, Samuel Putnam⁸⁻¹¹ Avery, born in New York, March 17, 1822. Died in New York, Aug. 11, 1904. Mother, Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, born in New York, Dec. 1, 1825. Died in Hartford, Conn., April 29, 1911.

9. Samuel Putnam⁸⁻¹² Avery, was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 7, 1847. Died in Hartford, Conn., Sept. 25, 1920.

THE DIX FAMILY
OF
WATERTOWN, MASSACHUSETTS

EDWARD¹ DIX
1635

All the material relating to the Dix Family was selected from Bond's *Genealogies and History of Watertown*, Second Edition, Boston, 1860, published by the New England Historic Genealogical Society.

WATERTOWN, MASSACHUSETTS

In March, 1628, the Plymouth Company sold to a company of six gentlemen, in England, the territory extending from a line three miles north of Merrimack River, to one three miles south of Charles River, and from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean. These grantees* soon afterwards conveyed to other gentlemen an interest in their purchase, and the number of joint proprietors soon became much enlarged. They assumed the title of "The Massachusetts Bay Company," and in a few days chose Matthew Craddock, a wealthy merchant of London, Governor, and Thomas Goffe, also a merchant of London, Deputy-Governor. A charter for their Company was not obtained from Charles I until the next year, March 4, 1628-9; but in June, 1628, three months after making the purchase, a company of emigrants was sent over, who landed at Salem, and commenced the settlement of that ancient town.

Captain John Endicott, one of the original purchasers of the Plymouth Company, was appointed Governor of this little colony; but it is to be observed that he was not made Governor of the Company, as the Governor and government thereof remained in England, and gave him his instructions. Mr. Roger Conant, with three others, had fixed their abode at Salem previously to

* These original grantees were Sir Henry Rosewell, Sir John Young, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphrey*, *John Endicott*, and Simon Whetcombe.

The patentees, to whom the charter of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay was granted, were Sir Henry Rosewell, Sir John Young, *Sir Richard Saltonstall*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphrey*, *John Endicott*, Simon Whetcombe, *Isaac Johnson*, Samuel Aldersey, John Ven, Matthew Craddock, George Harwood, *Increase Nowell*, Richard Pery, *Richard Bellingham*, Nathaniel Wright, Samuel Vassall, *Theophilus Eaton*, Thomas Goffe, Thomas Adams, *John Browne*, *Samuel Browne*, Thomas Hutchins, *William Vassall*, *William Pinchson*, and George Foxcroft.

The names of those who came to Massachusetts Bay are printed in italics. Mr. John Winthrop was neither an original grantee nor a patentee; and the first time his name appears in the records of the Company was September 19, 1629, after it had been determined to transfer the government and patent to the colony.

the arrival of Endicott and his company*; but as Conant was not sent there by the Massachusetts Bay Company, his plantation there, with his very few companions, has not been allowed to give date to the town.

In July, 1629, Governor Cradock proposed to the Company to transfer the government of the plantation from England to the colony—"to those that shall inhabit there." A meeting of the Company was called together, August 28, to discuss the question about such a removal. On the same day it was ordered that one committee be appointed to prepare arguments in favor of a removal, at the head of which was placed Sir Richard Saltonstall; and another committee to prepare arguments against it. On the next day, August 29, after long debate, it was determined by a vote to be "the consent of the Company," that "the Government patent should be settled in New England." At a "Court" (meeting of the Company), on the 19, of October, it was determined that a Governor and assistants should be chosen for New England, and the next day, Mr. John Winthrop was chosen Governor, and Mr. John Humfrey, Deputy-Governor. At the last court of the Company held in England, March 23, 1629-30, on board the *Arabella*, Mr. Thomas Dudley was elected Deputy-Governor in place of Mr. Humfrey, who had concluded not to go to New England at that time.

After determining to remove the government of the Company to the colony, and electing a Governor and Assistants with that in view, active preparations were made for a large emigration the ensuing year. Seventeen emigrant ships left England in the year 1630, of which fourteen sailed before the first of June. The first ship, the *Lyon*, sailed in February, and arrived at Salem in May, where the passengers probably remained, awaiting the arrival of their expected companions, with the Governor and Assistants. The next ship, the *Mary and John*, carrying the Dorchester company, who first planted Dorchester, sailed from Plymouth on the 20th of March, and arrived at Nantasket, Sunday, May 30th, fourteen days before the *Ambrose* and the

* See Note under Record of 3 Thomas² Park relative to Edward¹ Dix.

Talbot, sailed from the Isle of Wight, bringing the Governor, John Wilson, and others, who afterwards held prominent places in the early history of the Colony.

The *Arabella* arrived at Salem, June 12th, the *Jewell*, June 13th, the *Ambrose*, June 18th, and the *Talbot*, July 2d.

1. EDWARD¹ DIX

1. EDWARD¹ DIX, embarked at Gravesend, Jan. 16, 1635, aged 19, and in the same vessel came Jane Wilkinson, aged 20. He was admitted freeman, May 4, 1635, and his name is on the earliest list of proprietors of Watertown.

He died July 9, 1660, and his will, proved Oct. 2, 1660, mentions his wife (not named), son John², daughter Abigail Park and other daughters, not named. His wife, Jane was the mother of his children. He had a second wife, Susan —.

Inventory 299 acres, £254. 3. 10. See *Park Family*.

He was a selectman in 1650, and he had been a constable previous to April, 1651, when he, and others with him, were fined by the Court, each 10s. for not providing half-bushels for standards, when constables.

Edward¹ Dix married, second, Susanna —; he died July 9, 1660. His will was proved Oct. 2, 1660, and mentions his wife, son John², daughter Abigail Park and other daughters not named. Inventory, 299 acres, £254, 3. 0.

"Ap. 2, 1661, widow Susanna Dix brought suit against Sergt. John Wincol and John² Dix, executors of Edward¹ Dix, for her dowry. Verdict for the plaintiff, viz., one-third rents and the costs, £13." Bond's *History of Watertown*, pp. 198, 753.

Children of Edward¹ and Jane (Wilkinson) Dix:—

- + 2. i. Abigail², born in Watertown, May 2, 1637. See *forward*.
- 3. ii. Mary², born in Watertown, May 2, 1639. Married Feb. 5, 1662-3, Abraham² Browne, Jr.*; born March 6, 1639-40, son of Abraham¹† and Lydia (—) Browne of Watertown. Abraham² Browne died 1667, leaving 2 (Browne) children. His inventory was dated Sept. 28, 1667.

Mary² (Dix) Browne married second, Aug. or Sept., 1668, Samuel Rice of Sudbury. Mary² (Dix) Browne-Rice died June 18, 1678. Samuel Rice, her second husband, died (will proved April 7), 1685. She had four children by her second husband, Samuel Rice.

4. iii. John², born in Watertown, Sept. 4, 1640; died Nov. 7, 1714.
5. iv. Rebecca², born in Watertown, Feb. 28, 1641-2. Married, Feb. 18, 1667, Thomas² Flagg, born April 28, 1646; he was a son of Thomas¹† and Mary (—) Flagg of Watertown. Thomas² Flagg was guardian of Lydia, daughter of Abraham² Browne, Jr., and he lived sometime on land belonging to the estate of Abraham¹ Browne, Sr., which had been occupied by Abraham² Browne, Jr., after his marriage.
Thomas² and Rebecca (Dix) Flagg had six children.
6. v. Deborah², born in Watertown, married Richard Barns, of Marlboro. Richard and Deborah (Dix) Barns had five children.

2. ABIGAIL² DIX

2. ABIGAIL² DIX, eldest child of Edward¹ and Jane (Wilkinson) Dix, of Watertown, Mass., was born in Watertown, May 2, 1637, married Dec. 1, 1653, Thomas² Park. Died in Cambridge, Mass., Feb. 3, 1691. *See Park Family.*

* Abraham² Browne purchased land in Groton where he proposed to settle near his sister Lydia² Browne. But Mary² Dix to whom he was engaged to be married, was unwilling to go to Groton and she "desired Thomas² Parks (her brother-in-law) to go to Ipswich to treat with Mrs. Hodges to see what she would do for her son Abraham² Browne upon his marriage." Thomas² Park went, and "Mrs. Hodges gave him (her son) full power to settle upon her land in Watertown," &c. [Mrs. Hodges before she married Andrew Hodges of Ipswich, was the widow of Abraham¹ Browne and therefore the mother of Abraham² Browne.]

† See Bond's *Watertown*, pp. 124-6.

‡ Thomas¹ Flagg, settled in Watertown as early as 1643, and was probably the ancestor of all families bearing that name in this country. He was selectman 1671, '74, '75, '76, and '78. He lost his left eye by a gun-shot accident, previous to 1659 and he died Feb. 6, 1697-8. His will dated March 5, 1696-7. His wife Mary was born 1619. Her will dated Dec. 30, 1702 and proved April 21, 1703. Bond's *Watertown*, p. 219.

SAMUEL PUTNAM⁹ AVERY

Pedigree connection with Edward¹ Dix who embarked at Gravesend, 1635.

1. Great⁴-grandfather, Edward¹ Dix, embarked at Gravesend, January 16, 1635, aged 19. He died July 9, 1660. Great⁴-grandmother, Jane (Wilkinson) Dix who came over in the same vessel, aged 20.
2. Great⁴-grandfather, Thomas² Park, born in England, 1629. Died in Cambridge, Mass., Aug. 11, 1690. Great⁴-grandmother, Abigail² (Dix) Park, born in Watertown, Mass., May 2, 1637. Died in Cambridge, Mass., Feb. 3, 1691.
3. Great⁴-grandfather, John³ Park, born in Cambridge, Mass., Sept. 6, 1656. Died in Cambridge, Mass., March 21, 1718. Great⁴-grandmother, Elizabeth (Miller) Park, born —. Died —.
4. Great⁴-grandfather, Joseph⁴ Park, born in Newton, Mass., March 12, 1705. Died in Westerly, R. I., March 1, 1777. Great⁴-grandmother, Abigail (Greene) Park, born in Westerly, R. I., 1703. Died in Westerly, R. I., Oct. 19, 1772.
5. Great⁴-grandfather, Benjamin⁵ Park, born in Westerly, R. I., Nov. 1, 1735. Died at Bunker Hill(?), June 17, 1775. Great⁴-grandmother, Hannah Stanton (York) Park, born in Westerly, R. I., June 1, 1739. Died December, 1800.
6. Great-grandfather, Benjamin⁶ Parke, born in Charlestown, R. I., Sept. 16, 1765. Died in New York, Aug. 5, 1807. Great-grandmother, Susanna Maria (Keens) Parke, born in New York, Dec. 2, 1776. Died in New York, Feb. 17, 1807.
7. Grandfather, Samuel Putnam⁷ Avery, born in New York, Jan. 1, 1797. Died in New York, July 24, 1832. Grandmother, Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery, born in New York, April 24, 1804. Died in Jersey City, N. J., June 26, 1888. *See Avery Family.*
8. Father, Samuel Putnam⁸ Avery, born in New York, March 17, 1822. Died in New York, Aug. 11, 1904. Mother, Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, born in New York, Dec. 1, 1825. Died in Hartford, Conn., April 29, 1911.
9. Samuel Putnam⁹ Avery, was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 7, 1847. Died in Hartford, Conn., Sept. 25, 1920.

THE WHITMAN FAMILY
OF
WEYMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS

JOHN¹ WHITMAN

1638

Almost all the material relating to the Whitman Family was selected from "*The Descendants of John Whitman, of Weymouth, Mass.*," by Charles H. Farnam, A. M., New Haven, 1889.

THE WHITMAN FAMILY

Zachariah¹ Whitman, born in England, about 1595, sailed from London in the ship *Truelove*, Sept. 19, 1635, Jo. Gibbs, Master. He arrived at Boston, bringing with him his wife Sara and one son.

*The "*Original Lists*," edited by John Camden Hotten, under the title of "Register of the names of all ye Passinger w^{ch} Passed from ye Port of London for on whole yeare Ending at Xmas 1635," page 131 has the following:

"Theis vnder written names are to be transported to New England imbarqued in the Truelove Jo: Gibbs M^r. the Men have taken the oathe of Alleg. Supreme."

Zachariah ¹ Whitman	40
Sara	25 yeres
Zacha:	2½

The child probably died soon after his arrival, as no mention is afterwards made of him.

Investigations made in England have brought to light the marriage of a "Zacharie¹ Whitman" to Sarah, daughter of Richard and Martha (Turner) Biscoe, at Chesham, Co. Bucks, England, June 10, 1630; Sarah Biscoe was baptized at Chesham, Nov. 9, 1606.

The Milford, Conn., records show that Nathaniel Biscoe or Briscoe, Jr., a cousin of Sarah Biscoe, was among the early settlers, thus further identifying "Zachariah¹ Whitman" of Milford, with the "Zacharie" of the Chesham marriage. A large number of the Milford settlers are also proven to have come from this immediate vicinity of Bucks and Herts.

Zachariah¹ Whitman, a brother of our ancestor (John¹ Whit-

* Also in "Result of some Researches among British Archives for information relative to Founders of New England." Drake's *History of Boston*, 1860, p. 43.

man) settled first in Dorchester, Mass. The Dorchester records show that Jan. 16, 1636, "Zachariah¹ Whitman and Henry Withington" were ordered "to vew the pole in the field next to their houses." In the list of allotments of pasture to Dorchester citizens, under date of March 18, 1637-8, "Mr. Whitman" was allowed "13¼ akers on the necke"; also "13¼ akers of the Cowes pasture"; his name appears third on the list, only preceded by those of "Mr. Stoughton" and "Mr. Glover"; his position on this list, together with the prefix of "Mr." indicates that he was a man of means and position.

The early settlement of the New Haven Colony was mostly by Dorchester people, who sailed from Boston, March 30, 1638; their first Sunday, April 18, was observed by Mr. Davenport preaching in the morning and Mr. Prudden in the afternoon. Some differences soon occurred in the colony between the friends of Mr. Davenport and Mr. Prudden, which occasioned the separation of the followers of the latter gentleman, and although they were all given allotments of lands in the so-called "Hertfordshire quarter," still they seemed to have moved in a body to their new settlement of Milford. This purchase was made from the Indians, Feb. 12, 1639, the deed being taken by William Fowler, Edmund Tapp, Zachariah¹ Whitman, Benjamin Fenn and Alexander Bryan in trust for the planters. The first enrollment was made Nov. 29, 1639, Zachariah¹ Whitman heading the list.

The church records of Milford contain the following entry in the handwriting of Mr. Prudden. "At Milford, I, Peter Prudden, was called to ye office of a Pastour in this Church, and ordained at New Haven by Zachariah¹ Whitman, William Fowler, Edmund Tapp, designated by ye Church for that purpose, Zachariah¹ Whitman being ye Moderator for that meeting, in a day of solemn humiliation, upon ye 3rd Saturday in April, being, I remember, ye 18th day of April, 1640."

At a previous meeting held in New Haven, Aug. 22, 1639, Zachariah¹ Whitman had been chosen one of the "seven pillars" of the Milford Church.

In the list of Milford planters, made in 1643, the family of

Zachariah¹ Whitman was entered as comprising two persons and "800 estates."

He was chosen a delegate to the "General Court," held April 3, 1644.

June 26, 1645, Zachariah¹ Whitman was ordained "Ruling Elder," which position he retained till his death, as the records show that the second minister, Mr. Roger Newton, was installed, Aug. 22, 1660, by "Elder Whitman" and deacon John Fletcher and Robert Treat, Esq.

In the original plan of New Haven, made 1641, Mr. Whitman was allotted a plot of ground in the "Hertfordshire quarter," now the south-west corner of Chapel and College streets; he retained his interest in this plot till 1647, when he transferred it to Mr. Bracey.

He died April 23, 1663; his wife died (buried Jan. 2, 1670-1), leaving a nuncupative will, in which she mentions her "cousins," George Clark, John Streame, Zachary² Whitman [son of John¹ Whitman]; the inventory amounted to £359. The following copy of the will of Zachary¹ Whitman was obtained from the probate records in New Haven.

The Last Will and Testament of Zachary¹ Whitman of Milford, Deceased.

The 24th of Ye 2d Month, 1666.

Memorandum that I, Zachary Whitman, of Milford, in the Colony of Connecticut, being weake of body but of perfect memory, doe make this my last will and testament in manner & forme as followeth:

Item. I give to Mr. Roger Newton five pounds.

Item. I give to my cousin, Zachary² Whitman [son of John¹ Whitman] my brother's son, my house & land at ye decease of my wife.

Item. I give to my cousin, Zachary² Whitman [son of John¹ Whitman] all the bookes my wife can spare.

Item. I give to my cousin, George Clarke, twenty pounds to be payd, ten pound in one yeare's end, and ten pound at ye end of ye next yeare.

Item. I give to my cousin, John Streame, ten pound at this yeare's end, ten pound at ye next yeare's end to be payd.

Item. I give Doctor Preston's books to my cousin, Clarke, and my cousin, Streame.

Item. I leave ye rest of my estate to my wife & make her my Executrix.

I desire Mr. ffen, Thomas Welsh, Thomas Wheeler, Richard Plat, to see this my will & testament fulfilled.

Zachary Whitman.

Witness: Richard Plat, Thomas Welsh.

The mark T of Thomas Wheeler.

Richard Plat, one of the above named witnesses was apointed by the testator to subscribe his name to the will above writ, which wee doe also testifye.

Thomas Welsh, Thomas Wheeler, his T marke.

The witnesses Sworne in court & ye will approved & execution granted to ye Executrix with ye sd will annext.

James Bishop, *Clerk.*

As Attest.

Zachariah¹ Whitman had four sons and five daughters, all but one of whom survived him, and six of whom lived to be over eighty.

1. JOHN¹ WHITMAN

(brother of Zachariah¹ Whitman)

1. JOHN¹ WHITMAN, born in England, must have arrived in this country prior to December, 1638.* His wife, Ruth (—) Whitman and several children came in 1641. "Ruth (—) Whitman died 8, 17, 1662." John¹ Whitman died Nov. 13, 1692.

John¹ Whitman, born in England, must have arrived in this country some time, and probably some years, prior to December, 1638, when, as it appears from Winthrop's Journal, he was made free, viz: admitted to the rights and privileges of a citizen. This was not usually admissible until after a probationary residence of some time, and never until after admission as a member of some established church. He probably settled at Weymouth, twelve miles from Boston soon after his arrival, but at what precise period cannot be ascertained, but he appears among those who received allotments of land in the list of 1642; his share is described in the Weymouth records as:

"Twenty and one acres in the west ffield, fifteen of them upland and six of salt marsh, bounded on the east with a high waie, on the west and north with a creeke, on the south with land of

* A correspondent has sent a note stating that he arrived in the ship *Confidence*, Dec. 1638, but is unable to give his authority for this statement.

Walter Harris—ffower acres and halfe on the western neck, bounded on the east with a creeke, on the west with a meadow, on the north the land of Thomas Streame and the land of Mr. Jenner on the south—eleven acres in Harrison's Raigne first given to himselfe, the land of William Hues on the east, a swamp on the west, the land of Hugh Roe on the north and Mr. Newman on the south—sixty acres by the great pond first given to Mr. Hull, bounded on the east with land of William Carpenter, on the west with a swamp and the pond on the south—ffour acres of ffresh marsh first given to Mr. Hull, bounded with a creek on the east and Edward Benete's marsh on the south."

John¹ Whitman owned and lived upon a farm adjoining the north side of the highway, leading by the north side of the meeting-house of the north parish in Weymouth, and directly off against it, and extending to Weymouth river; and his dwelling-house was situated near the center of it.

May 14, 1645, the Court granted a petition of "the Town Weymouth" that Capt. Perkins, William Torrey and John¹ Whitman may be authorized by the Court to hear and determine as committees all actions in the town under 20 shillings; the following year, Nov. 4, 1646, "Lest Tory," John Whitman and Thomas Dyer were chosen to end small causes and controversies at Weymouth.

The first deed on record to John¹ Whitman bears date 10. 28. 1649, in which Thomas Jenner of Charlestown grants to Elder Bates and John Whitman of Weymouth "one dwelling house at Weymouth, two orchards and twenty-one acres adjoining more or less; also twelve acres at ye western neck, be it more or less; also half an acre upon Grape Island, be it more or less; also forty acres, which is his own pp (proper) lot, be it more or less, and eighteen acres which was his father's; also ye round marsh, being four acres more or less, and one acre of fresh marsh adjoining, and six acres of marsh above ye fresh pond and a wood lot on Hingham side."

The deed on record made by John¹ Whitman bears date, March 19, 1648, by which he sells to William Hayward about 22 acres

of land in "Braintry" which he had purchased of James Nash.

In the list of 1651, Ensign Whitman is given 12 lots of land, and on the list of 1663 he receives 81 lots comprising 60 acres.

These entries show that he must have been one of the most extensive holders of real estate in the town.

At a session of the General Court held May 15, 1664, on the occasion of John Barrell and Richard Mayer being sent as Messengers to the Indians, John¹ Whitman was allowed four shillings a day "for his paynes" and use of "his horse in ye Journey he was employed in for the countryes services to the Narragansetts."

The office of ensign was held by John¹ Whitman till March 16, 1680, when he was relieved from further duty and Ephraim Hunt, Jr., appointed in his place.

He was appointed an ensign in 1645, which was, probably, the first military appointment in Weymouth.

Children of John¹ and Ruth (—) Whitman:—

2. i. Sarah², born in England. Married, about 1653, Abraham, born 1629, son of Thomas Jones of Hingham, Mass. They resided at Hull. Abraham died Jan. 25, 1718. His widow died June 11, 1718. They had nine children.

Sewall mentions that Abraham Jones lived with his wife Sarah² within a month or two of 65 years, and that he was in his 89th year; his will was dated Jan. 8, 1716-17; a codicil was made June 21, 1716-17. It is supposed there were nine children, one of whom, a son, died before his father; the will mentions wife Sarah, six sons and daughter Sarah², deceased.

3. ii. Thomas², born in England, 1629. Married, Nov. 22, 1656, Abigail Byram, daughter of Nicholas and Martha (Shaw) Byram. Thomas² Whitman died in 1712, aged eighty-three years. Thomas² and Abigail (Byram) Whitman had seven children.

Thomas² Whitman was about twelve years old when he came with his mother and some others of the children, about 1641, to settle in this country. In 1653 he was made a freeman at Boston, being then twenty-four years of age; he was a church member, of course.

Thomas² Whitman at first settled in Weymouth; but in 1662 sold his farm there, as did his father-in-law, Nicholas Byram, and they both removed to Bridgewater, Mass., twelve miles south of Weymouth, where Thomas² Whitman settled upon a valuable tract of land, in the easterly part of the

town, since called Whitman's Neck, containing about two hundred acres, and lying between the rivers Sautucket and Mastfield, and coming to a point at their junction. There Thomas² Whitman resided fifty years, until his death.

His will, dated 1711, mentions four daughters as then living; and after reciting that his sons had been provided for by deeds of conveyance, makes them, after the decease of their mother, his residuary legatees. John³ Whitman was the executor of this will.

Thomas³ Whitman built various homesteads. The first house, built about 1663, was burnt by the Indians in 1676. The second, built in 1676, was occupied but a few years. The third, was built in 1680, and was occupied by four generations, and was the birthplace of thirty-six children, viz.: Thomas³ Whitman till his death in 1712; Nicholas³ Whitman, his son, and six of his children, 1700-1736; John⁴ Whitman, son of Nicholas³, and the birthplace of his (John⁴ Whitman's) six children, 1730-1747; John⁵ Whitman and his fourteen children, 1775-1801. In June John⁵ Whitman raised his new house, and in September of the same year, the old house was sold to David French and by him moved to Satucket on the Plymouth road.

4. iii. John², born in England. Married, Oct. 19, 1662, Ruth, daughter of William Reed. She died in 1662. John² married, second, Abigail Hollis and had five children. He died Feb. 1, 1713.
- + 5. iv. Zechariah², born in Weymouth, 1644. *See forward.*
6. v. Abiah², born in Weymouth about 1646. Married —, Mary, daughter of Andrew Ford. She died March 15, 1715, leaving seven children. Abiah² resided with his father and inherited the homestead. He was admitted freeman, Oct. 12, 1681.

The records of the town of Easton show that he was one of the largest owners of land in the so-called "North Purchase" of Taunton, which comprises the present towns of Easton, Norton and Mansfield; he must have acquired this land prior to 1700; the earliest conveyance is dated Aug. 8, 1704, by which he gives James Hogg the land on which he settled "in consideration of the faithful services performed for Capt. John Thomas, his son-in-law."

By his will,* dated Jan. 28, 1722-3, proven Feb. 26, 1727, Abiah² Whitman bequeaths to his sons John², "Zechary"² and Abiah² his movables in equal parts; divides his lands in Taunton between John and Zechary; leaves his homestead, subject to certain legacies, to his son Abiah²; mentions his

* *Suffolk Probate*, Vol. 26, p. 155.

"late daughter Elizabeth," wife of Timothy Cooper, his daughters Lydia Thomas, Mary Daily and Eleanor Turner; appoints his sons John² and Abiah² executors. The will was witnessed by John Torrey, Benjamin Richard, John Torrey, Jr. The will is endorsed "Serg't. Whitman's Will."

Inventory £1974. 10. 6. Among the items in the executors' account, the following for funeral expenses are interesting as showing something of the social position of the man, viz.:

Paid for 9 prs. gloves, at 5.....	£2. 05. 0.
" " 27 " " " 4 and 1 pr. at 3	5. 11. 0.
" " crape for hats, etc.....	4. 15. 9.
" " 10 galls. wine at the funeral, at 6	3. 0. 0.
" " coffin.....	10. 0.
" " digging grave, and bell	10. 0.

£16. 11. 9.

5. ZECHARIAH² WHITMAN

5. ZECHARIAH² WHITMAN, third son of John¹ and Ruth (—) Whitman, was born at Weymouth, Mass., 1644. (Harvard, 1668.) Married, Sarah, baptized May 26, 1650, twin daughter with Anna, of John Alcock of Roxbury. The contract of marriage was dated Oct. 26, 1670. Sarah (Alcock) Whitman died "April ye 3rd, 1715, aged 65 yrs." Zechariah² Whitman died Nov. 5, 1726.

Zechariah² Whitman was ordained, Oct. 13, 1670, upon a salary of £40, as the first minister of Point Alderton, Nantasket or Hull, which, in 1673, was taxed more than Medford, Gloucester or Exeter, and one-third as much as Roxbury. In May, 1673, he was admitted as a freeman. At the death of his uncle, Zachariah Whitman of Milford, Conn., in 1666, he inherited the former's property in that town, and in the right of his wife was possessed of a considerable estate at Stowe, Mass. With the exception of Mr. Whitman, Hull has never had a minister whose service continued through life.

Zechariah² Whitman "was a good scholar and penman, and wrote most of the wills and legal papers in Hull." He signed the preface to a collection of manuscripts written by Rev. Edward Thompson, published in Boston, 1712.

By his will,* dated June 12, 1725, and proved Dec. 16, 1726, Zechariah² Whitman confirms the grants of land already made to his sons and daughters; charges the shares of his sons, Zechariah³ and John,³ with certain payments to their sister Joanna³ Hunt; makes his son Samuel³ and daughters Sarah³ Goold, Joanna³ Hunt and Mary³ Jacobs, his residuary legatees, and appoints his son Samuel³, sole and only executor. The will was witnessed by Nehemiah Hobart, John Goold and Samuel Loring.

Children of Zechariah² and Sarah (Alcock) Whitman:—

- +7. i. Zechariah³, born at Hull, Mass., 1672. *See forward.*
8. ii. John³, born at Hull, 1674; died Feb. 22, 1684. The gravestone placed over this son was evidently inscribed by his father, and is the oldest stone in the Hull graveyard.
9. iii. Joanna³, born at Hull. Married Ephraim or John Hunt, and resided in Boston.
10. iv. Samuel³, born at Hull, 1676. (Harvard, 1696.) Married, March 19, 1707, Sarah Stoddard, born April 1, 1680; she was a daughter of the Rev. Solomon and Esther (Warham) Stoddard, of Northampton.

Samuel³ Whitman died July 31, 1751. His widow, Sarah (Stoddard) Whitman died Sept. 10, 1755. They had seven children.

Samuel³ Whitman is mentioned as having occasionally preached at Lancaster, Mass., between 1697-1701. In 1699 he was employed as teacher of the Grammar School at Salem, where he probably remained till he was called to preach at Farmington, Conn., at that time one of the largest and wealthiest towns in the State.

The following are extracts taken from Farmington records: At the General Court held 1702, "the town of Farmington, laboring under great difficulties in reference to the calling and settling of a minister among them, and other ecclesiastical concerns, certain of the inhabitants make their address to this General Assembly, praying for counsel and relief. In answer whereunto, this assembly doth order and direct them to seek and help from the Rev. Elders, namely, the Rev. Mr. Abram Pierson, Mr. James Noyes, Mr. Taylor, Mr. N. Russel, Mr. Samuel Russel and Mr. Thomas Ruggles, or any five of them, whom this assembly doth direct to be helpful unto them, and to nominate and appoint a minister for them, and in case the minister so nominated and appointed will undertake this work,

* *Suffolk Probate*, Vol. 25, p. 177.

this assembly doth hereby order that said inhabitants of Farmington shall entertain him for one year, and shall also pay to him such salary as hath been usual and customary among them."

In 1705, messengers were sent to Nantascot, near Boston, to confer with Mr. Samuel^s Whitman. So great was the zeal of the people, that they proposed to pay to any one who would lend money to bear the expenses of their messengers, two shillings for one shilling lent till the time of the next minister's rate. Their offers of salary were very liberal; first 90 pounds a year with the use of the parsonage in the Pequabuck meadows, as also forty acres of land in fee, and a house, he finding glass and nails. The year after, 200 pounds were voted as a settlement, a salary of 100 pounds, and his firewood. Wheat at that time was five shillings and threepence per bushel.

He was ordained Dec. 10, 1706, and remained in his charge till his death, July 31, 1751. In 1708, Mr. Whitman being about to visit his friends in Boston, the town, by their vote, provided for the service and expense of a "waighting man" to attend their minister. Mrs. Whitman joined the church at Farmington by letter, Feb. 11, 1710-11.

In 1726 he was appointed one of the Fellows of Yale College, a position he retained for more than twenty years.

He had, by bequest, one half of his father's land in Stowe, Mass., and was appointed executor of the will.

11. v. Sarah^s, born at Hull. Married Mr. Cocks, of Second Church, Boston. She married second, Lieut. Robert Gould, Sr., of Hull, his third wife. Sarah^s lived with and took care of her father till his death, he having in 1722 deeded her his homestead, to take effect upon his decease. She died at Hull, Sept. 29, 1784.
12. vi. Elizabeth^s, born at Hull. Died there Nov. 19, 1708.
13. vii. John^s, born at Hull, 1688. Married Mary Graves of Charlestown. She died Nov. 24, 1716, aged 17 yrs., 9 mos.; John^s married, second, Dorcas, widow of Thomas Chitty, and daughter of Capt. Jacob Green of Charlestown. She died Oct. 18, 1718, aged 34. John^s married, third, Margaret, widow of John Damon of Charlestown, and daughter of Rev. Thomas Clark. She died Oct. 16, 1758, aged 66. John^s Whitman was a magistrate, deacon of the church, and evidently one of the wealthiest and most influential men of the town. He received by deed and inheritance from his father, a large tract of land at Assobet or Stowe, on which he settled; and he also received from his second wife and her brother, a considerable property. He died Aug. 3, 1772, aged 82. By his will, dated Oct. 15, 1757, proven Sept. 8, 1772, he makes

his son, Charles⁴, residuary legatee, and appoints him sole executor; he also directs that Charles⁴ shall support a negro servant named Boston, who is to be made free. They had seven children.

14. viii. Mary³, born at Hull. Married, Oct. 22, 1713, Nathaniel Jacobs of Hull.

15. ix. Eunice³, born at Hull, April 10, 1696. Died Oct. 5, 1734.

7. ZECHARIAH³ WHITMAN

7. ZECHARIAH³ WHITMAN, eldest son of Zechariah² and Sarah (Alcock) Whitman, was born at Hull, Mass., 1672. Married, Jan. 6, 1702-3, Mrs. Sarah Fitch. She died Nov. 27, 1705. Zechariah³ Whitman married second, March 18, 1706, Damaris Carmen, who died Nov. 27, 1706. Zechariah³ Whitman, married, third, Hannah —. He died, 1752, aged 80. His third wife survived him some years; she executed a deed as late as 1757.

Zechariah³ Whitman received from his father, Zechariah² Whitman (John¹), the Milford estate left him (Zechariah² Whitman) by Zechariah¹ Whitman, the brother of John¹ Whitman. From references in the Milford record, it appears that Zechariah³ Whitman must have moved to that town about 1700, though the deed from his father (Zechariah² Whitman) of the first portion given was dated Feb. 1, 1708-9. By his father's will Zechariah³ Whitman received the balance of the Milford lands not included in the deed of gift, upon the condition that he cause no disturbance with regard to the farm lands at Stowe, Mass., given to his brother John³ Whitman; and that he pay his sister, Joanna (Whitman) Hunt of Boston, one hundred pounds.

Zechariah³ Whitman's will was dated Aug. 24, 1749, and the inventory of personal property, filed May 11, 1752, amounting to £439. 2. 6., gives his wife Hannah one-third of personalty and the improvement of the realty for life; mentions his daughters Sarah Welch and Damaris Williams, as deceased; after legacies to their children, divides property among his daughters, Hannah

Platt*, Elizabeth Bryam and Frances Fenn; appoints his sons-in-law, Joseph Platt,† Nathan Bryam and Aaron Fenn, executors.

Children of Zechariah³ and his first wife, Sarah (Fitch) Whitman:—

16. i. Zechariah⁴, born in Milford, Conn., Oct. 23, 1704. Died Nov. 1, 1704.
17. ii. Sarah⁴, born in Milford, Nov. 16, 1705. Married, May 9, 1723, Thomas Welch. She died Oct. 26, 1740. They had seven children.

Child of Zechariah³ and his second wife, Damaris (Carmen) Whitman:—

18. iii. Damaris⁴, born in Milford; baptized April 8, 1711. Married Mr. Williams.

Children of Zechariah³ and his third wife, Hannah (—?) Whitman:—

- +19. iv. Hannah⁴, born in Milford. *See forward.*
20. v. Elizabeth⁴, born in Milford; baptized July 29, 1715. Married Nathan Bryam.
21. vi. Frances⁴, born in Milford; baptized Sept. 25, 1720. Married Aaron Fenn.

19. HANNAH⁴ WHITMAN

19. HANNAH⁴ WHITMAN, daughter of Zechariah³ and his third wife, Hannah (—) Whitman, was born at Milford, Conn. Married Joseph⁴ Platt, born at Milford, Sept. 9, 1706 (Yale, 1733); he was the only son of Joseph³ and Hannah (Hanford) Platt. *See Platt Family.*

* See *Avery Family.*

† See *Platt Family.*

SAMUEL PUTNAM¹² AVERY

Pedigree connection with John¹ Whitman.

1. Great⁴-grandfather, John¹ Whitman, born in England, ——. Died Nov. 13, 1692. Great⁴-grandmother, Ruth ——, born ——. Died "8.17.1662."
2. Great⁴-grandfather, Zechariah² Whitman, born in Weymouth, Mass., 1644. Died Nov. 5, 1726. Great⁴-grandmother, Sarah (Alcock) Whitman, bapt. May 26, 1650. Died April 3, 1715.
3. Great⁴-grandfather, Zechariah² Whitman, born in Hull, Mass., 1672. Died 1752. Great⁴-grandmother, Sarah (Fitch) Whitman, born ——. Died Nov. 27, 1705.
4. Great⁴-grandfather, Joseph⁴ Platt, born in Milford, Conn., Sept. 9, 1706. Died ——. Great⁴-grandmother, Hannah⁴ (Whitman) Platt, born in Milford, Conn., ——. Died ——. *Platt Family.*
5. Great²-grandfather, Ephraim⁸ Avery, born in Brooklyn, Conn., April 13, 1741. Died in Rye, N. Y., Nov. 5, 1776. Great²-grandmother, Hannah⁶ (Platt) Avery, born in Milford, Conn., 1737. Died in Rye, N. Y., May 13, 1776. *Avery Family.*
6. Great-grandfather, John William⁹ Avery, born in Rye, N. Y., May 24, 1767. Died in New York, 1799. Great-grandmother, Sarah (Fairchild) Avery, born in Stratford, Conn., Feb. 28, 1773. Died in New York, May 6, 1837. *Fairchild Family.*
7. Grandfather, Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery, born in New York, Jan. 1, 1797. Died in New York, July 24, 1832. Grandmother, Hannah Anne (Parke) Avery, born in New York, April 24, 1804. Died Jersey City, N. J., June 26, 1888. *Parke Family.*
8. Father, Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery, born in New York, March 17, 1822. Died in New York, Aug. 11, 1904. Mother, Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, born Dec. 1, 1825. Died in Hartford, Conn., April 29, 1911.
9. Samuel Putnam¹² Avery, born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 7, 1847. Died in Hartford, Conn., Sept. 25, 1920.

THE FAIRCHILD FAMILY
OF
STRATFORD, CONNECTICUT

THOMAS' FAIRCHILD
1638

All the material relating to the Fairchild Family was selected from Orcutt's "*History of Stratford and Bridgeport*," Vols. I, II, published by the Fairfield County Historical Society, 1886.

STRATFORD, CONNECTICUT

Stratford village is located on the Housatonic River about one and a half miles from Long Island Sound, in Fairfield County, Conn., fourteen miles from New Haven and fifty-eight miles from New York City.

The original township, being twelve miles in length north and south, and about seven miles wide east and west, comprised most of the territory now included in the five townships of Stratford, Bridgeport, Huntington, Trumbull and Monroe.

Stratford was the seventh plantation settled within the present territory of Connecticut, Windsor, Hartford and Wethersfield. The three first were commenced in the years 1635-6; Saybrook was commenced under John Winthrop, the younger, in 1635, although but few families had arrived there in 1636.

Mr. Davenport's company from London, with Mr. Pruden's, arrived at New Haven the middle of April, 1638, and the next spring Mr. Pruden and his people who had remained all winter at New Haven, settled at Milford; and in the spring of 1639 a number of families settled at Stratford, then known by the Indian name of *Cupheag*.

The *Patent* for the territory of Connecticut, given by the Earl of Warwick in 1631, under King Charles I, included "all that part of New England, in America, which lies and extends itself from a river then called Narragansett river, the space of forty leagues upon a straight line near the sea shore towards the southwest, west and south, or west as the coast lieth towards Virginia," and therefore covered more area than the present State of Connecticut. The title to this land was given to the Earl of Warwick by the Plymouth Company of England. On "the 3d of November, 1620, just before the arrival of Mr. Robinson's people in New England, King James I, by letters patent, under the great

seal of England, incorporated the Duke of Lenox, the Marquis of Buckingham and Hamilton, the Earls of Arundel and Warwick and others, to the number of forty noblemen, knights and gentlemen, by the name 'of the Council established at Plymouth in the county of Devon, for the planting, ruling and governing of New England in America,' and granted unto them and their successors and assigns, all that part of America lying and being in breadth from forty degrees of north latitude from [the equinoctial line, to the forty-eighth degree of said northerly latitude inclusively, and in length of and within all the breadth aforesaid, throughout the main lands from sea to sea." The patent ordained that "this tract of country should be called New England in America, and by that name have continuance forever."

In 1630, this Plymouth Company conveyed to the Earl of Warwick the territory named in the Connecticut Patent, and which he sold, as above to the parties named in that Patent to the number of eleven persons. The difficulty of ascertaining the date when Stratford was made a town, with many other items of its organization and first settlement, is in consequence of the town records for ten of the first years having disappeared.

Not only were the plantations of Stratford and Fairfield called towns in April, 1640, but they had freemen who no doubt voted in the adoption of the first constitution, in January, 1638 (old style), they being a part of the government at the time, and hence in no great hurry to effect an organization of the town which would be burdensome to maintain; for during several years after the commencement of the settlement they seem to have been released from taxes, and perhaps this is the reason why representatives were not sent earlier than they were.

Stratford does not appear to have sent representatives to General Court until 1642, when Philip Groves filled that position. The taxes for Stratford and Fairfield were collected together as one plantation until 1647, when they were ordered by the Court to be divided. Also their courts were held jointly some years by magistrates appointed for the purpose.

A list exists of the owners of the fence about the first common

field,—this fence being a little over 353 rods in length, would, if it surrounded the entire field, have enclosed nearly fifty acres; but if it was a fence erected directly across the neck to Fresh Pond, it then would have enclosed several hundred acres, or all of Great Neck as well as Little Neck. This list of owners is without date but must have been recorded before 1651, since William Burritt's name is on it and he died before that year. It is probable that this is not a complete list. There are forty-one names and Thomas Fayrchild is number 16, with 6 rods, 9 feet.

The town of Stratford gave early attention to providing schooling for the children in it. In October, 1678, the town voted twenty pounds of money "for maintainance of a school master, the rest of the money to be levied upon the children priviledged by the school." In December of the same year they voted a school master "to teach small children to read and write."

"October 31, 1687. Also it was voted at the same meeting that what land the town hath at or near the ferry, upland and meadow now in the possession of Moses Wheeler, sen^r., that the produce and benefit thereof shall henceforth forever be paid and improved for and towards the maintainance of a publique school for and in the town of Stratford."

This was land the use of which was granted Moses Wheeler twenty-one years, gratuitously in view of his maintaining a ferry across the Housatonic River, and his twenty-one years having expired they thenceforward devoted the income to the support of a "publique school." That is, it was so much towards a free school, which is the earliest provision of the kind seen on record.

1. THOMAS¹ FAIRCHILD

1. THOMAS¹ FAIRCHILD was among the first settlers of Stratford, but whether he came here in 1638 or 1639 is not known. He was a merchant and may have come with his brother-in-law Thomas Sherwood, or with William Judson in 1638, for the purpose, principally, of trading with the Indians, or he may have

joined Mr. Blakeman's company at Wethersfield and come in 1639. Mr. Fairchild's wife was the daughter of Robert Seabrook*, and therefore sister to the wives of Thomas Sherwood, William Preston, of New Haven, and Lieut. Thomas Wheeler, of Milford.

Mr. Fairchild was one of the most prominent and respected men of Stratford. He was appointed by the General Court, with Thomas Sherwood and the Constables of Stratford, to draft men in 1654 for the then proclaimed Narragansett war; and again on a committee with Philip Groves, as leather sealer of Fairfield County.

In 1654 he was elected Deputy; and a number of times after that, and in 1663, he was nominated for an assistant, and the same for three successive years, but was not elected. As these nominations were made at or by the General Court, this shows the estimation of him by that body. In 1664 he was appointed a Commissioner, which was a Justice of the Peace, for Stratford, and was reappointed afterwards.

In what year the first Mrs. Fairchild died is not known, but her last child was born in 1653. Thomas[†] Fairchild married, second, Katharine Craigg, of London, a relative of Mrs. Elizabeth Whiting, of Hartford, Conn., to whom he secured in writing† £200, out of his estate. He died, Dec. 14, 1670, and the selectmen reported his inventory at £350. He had seven children by his first wife (—?) Seabrook and two by his second wife, Katharine Craigg.

The inventory of Mr. Fairchild's estate (amounting to £160 10s. 9d.) with the report of the Committee of the General Court, by whom it was appraised and set out to the widow, is

* Robert Seabrook was one of the first settlers in Stratford, and died very early—about 1650. He had four daughters.

† A footnote in Col. Rec. II, 199, gives the following facts: "A copy of the marriage contract between Thomas Fairchild of Stratford, merchant, and Katharine Craigg, a sister of Elizabeth Whiting, widow, of London (executed in England, Dec. 22, 1662, is in Priv. Controv., Vol. I, Doc. 20), in which Mr. Fairchild binds himself to convey to the said Katharine a life estate in his lands at Stratford, or, in case of his death before his arrival in New England, to cause to be paid to the said Katharine the sum of £200."

recorded in Col. Rec. of Lands II, 20. (Sec'y. of State's Office, Hartford, Conn.).

MARRIAGE CONTRACT OF THOMAS FAIRCHILD AND KATHERINE CRAGG

Whereas a marriage is Intended (by God's grace) shortly to be had and solemnized betweene the within bound Thomas Ffairchild and Katherine Cragg (sister of the within named Elizabeth Whiting.) And Whereas the said Thomas Ffairchild is Intended to transport himself and the said Katherine into New England in America. Now the condition of this obligation is such, that, in case the said marriage take effect, then if the said Thomas ffairchild doe and shall within the space of three months next after his Arrivall in New England aforesaid convey and assure in due form of Law, All that his ffarme or allottment in Stratford above mencioned with th' app'tences thereof And all messuages Lands Tenen^{ts} and hereditaments whatsoever to the said ffarme or allottm^t belonging or app'taining or reputed to belong or apportion, And all other the messages Lands Tenements Hereditaments of him the said Thomas ffairchild in Stratford aforesaid. And also the Revercion and Revercione, Remaindere, Rents Issues, and profitts of all and singular the premises, to and for the severall uses hereunder mencioned and to and for no nowe other use or purpose (that is to say) to the use and behoofe of him the said Thomas ffairchild for and during the tearme of his naturall Life. And from and after his decease then on to the use and behoofe of the said Katherine Cragg for and during the terme of her naturall Life, And from and after the deceases of them the said Thomas ffairchild and Katherine and the decease of the survivors of them, then unto the use and behoof of the Right Heires of him the said Thomas forever, And also if the said Thomas ffairchild shall at the time of the Conveying and assuring of the said p'misses as aforesaid do Lawfully, absolutely, and soly seized, of all and singular the said ffarme or Allottment, Lands and p'misses in fee Simple, And shall then have in himself an absolute, and good power and Right, to Convey and assure the same, to the uses aforesaid, in manner aforesaid, And als if the said Thomas shall in and by the conveyance and assurance which he shall as aforesaid make of the aforesaid p'misses graunt and warrant the same to be free, and Cleare of and from all Estates Charges, Tytles — and Incumbrances whatsoever at the tyme of the said Conveyances making —, and further in Case the said Thomas ffairchild shall happen to decease out of this mortall life, before his Arrivall in new England aforesaid, and before the making of the said Conveyance and assurance, then if the said Thomas his Heires Executors administrators or assigns doe well and truly pay or cause to be paid onto the said John Winthroppe and Elizabeth Whiting theire Executors or assigns, to and for the use benefitt & behoof of the said Katherine Cragg the Sume of Two hundred pounds of Lawfull money of England, within Two monethes next after the decease of the said Thomas ffairchild (if she the said Katherine shall be then living) that then this obligation to be voyd or else it to stand in full force and vertue'.

This is a true Coppie of the Originall draught of the Bond dated by Mr. Fairchild to the Obligee herein named.

Witness my hand

W^m Medley

July, 1671

I underwritten doe hereby declare that a writing to the full intent & purpose of this writing contained in these annexed sheetes was signed sealed & delivered by the herein mentioned M^r Thomas Fairchild upon the marriage intended betweene the before named M^r Thomas Fairchild and M^{rs} Katherine Cragg herein mentioned.

Witness my hand

John Winthrop.

May 15, 1673.

Children of Thomas¹ Fairchild and his first wife, —? Seabrook:

- + 2. i. Samuel², was born in Stratford, Aug. 31, 1640. *See forward.*
3. ii. Sarah², was born in Stratford, Feb. 19, 1641-2, married, —, Jehiel² Preston, her cousin. He was baptized — 14, 1640, son of William¹ Preston and —? who was the daughter of Robert Seabrook. Jehiel and Sarah² (Fairchild) Preston had six children.

Jehiel² Preston was born in New Haven, Conn., and came to Stratford in April, 1662. The townsmen, in behalf of the town, agreed to give him a house and shop and a number of acres of land and ten pounds in money, provided he should do the town's work for seven years, to which he agreed. He was a blacksmith.

He was elected a constable in 1675, and on Nov. 11, of the same year, was chosen to act with a committee "according to ye order of ye General Court respecting fortifications." On Nov. 18, 1678, it was decided to build a new Meeting-house, and the building committee were "Capt. (W^m) Curtiss, Sergt. Jerem. Judson, John Curtiss, Sergt. Jehiel² Preston, and John Birdsey, Jr."

Jehiel² Preston was also a representative to the General Court in 1683. His father, William¹ Preston, came from London to Dorchester, Mass., in 1635, on the *Truelove*. In his will, dated July 9, 1647, he mentions his first and second wife. His first wife was Mary —?, his second a daughter of Robert Seabrook, who gave to his grandson, Jehiel² Preston, half of his home lot in Stratford.

William¹ Preston owned an estate in Giggleswich, County York, England, in the most western part of West Riding.

4. iii. John², was born in Stratford, May 1, 1644, died young.
5. iv. Thomas², was born in Stratford, Feb. 21, 1645, married —,

Sarah —, and died in Woodbury, March 27, 1686-7. They had three children.

6. v. Dinah², was born in Stratford, July 14, 1648.

7. vi. Zechariah², was born in Stratford, Dec. 14, 1651. Married, Nov. 3, 1681, Hannah, born Dec. —, 1665, daughter of John Beach*. In a list of landed proprietors, Jan. 13, 1699, Zechariah² was credited with owning twenty acres. He died June 23, 1703. They had nine children.

His widow married, second, May 5, 1708, John, son of William and Elizabeth Burritt of Stratford. John Burritt died Feb. 1, 1726-7.

8. vii. Emma², was born in Stratford, Oct. —, 1653. Married, April 20, 1676, Hackaliah Preston, her cousin. He was baptized April 9, 1643. They had one son.

2. SAMUEL² FAIRCHILD

2. SAMUEL² FAIRCHILD, eldest son of Thomas¹ and —? (Seabrook) Fairchild, was born in Stratford, Aug. 31, 1640. Married, —? Mary² Wheeler, born in Stratford, Sept. 13, 1655; she was a daughter of Moses¹ and Miriam (Hawley) Wheeler†. Samuel² Fairchild died about 1704. They had four children. His widow married, second, Dec. —, 1705, in Stratford, Benjamin Beach, born March 8, 1673-4, he was a son of John Beach of Stratford.

Children of Samuel² and Mary (Wheeler) Fairchild:—

9. i. Robert², was born in Stratford, —, 1681. His grandfather Wheeler left him some property.

+ 10. ii. Samuel², was born in Stratford, —, 1683. *See forward.*

11. iii. Edward², was born in Stratford. Removed to Newtown before 1705(?). Married Jan. 25, 1710, Elizabeth, born Feb. 10, 1688, daughter of Ebenezer and Dorothy (Smith) Blakeman. They had five children.

12. iv. Jonathan², was born in Stratford.

* The name of John Beach appears first on the Stratford records in 1661, with Richard Beach, probably a brother, and purchased his first land there May 21, 1660.

† See *Wheeler Family*.

10. SAMUEL³ FAIRCHILD

10. SAMUEL³ FAIRCHILD, second son of Samuel² and Mary (Wheeler) Fairchild, was born in Stratford, —, 1683. Married, Jan. 3, 1705, Ruth Beach, born about 1685; she was a daughter of John, Jr., and Hannah (Staples) Beach of Fairfield, Conn. Ruth (Beach) Fairchild died Jan. 30, 1722. They had seven children.

Samuel³ Fairchild married, second, Jan. 24, 1723, Dinah Burwell of West Haven, Conn. They had six children.

Children of Samuel³ and his first wife, Ruth (Beach) Fairchild:—

13. i. Anna⁴, was born in Stratford, Oct. 12, 1706. Died Feb. 9, 1722.
14. ii. Mary⁴, was born in Stratford, —? 27, 1708. Married March 7, 1728-9, Samuel Adams. They removed to Litchfield, Conn., where she died in her 106th year. They had seven children.
In a list of Representatives from Stratford, before 1776, Samuel Adams' name is mentioned twelve times, from 1748 to to 1770. Frequently he is called Captain.
- +15. iii. Samuel⁴, was born in Stratford, Feb. 3, 1710. *See forward.*
16. iv. Ephraim⁴, was born in Stratford, Aug. 28, 1713. Settled in Weston, Conn. His name appears on a list, dated Feb. 2, 1742-3, as subscribing £10 towards a new episcopal church in Stratford.
17. v. Abigail⁴, was born in Stratford, Dec. 15, 1715.
18. vi. Eunice⁴, was born in Stratford, May 20, 1718. Died April 21, 1721.
19. vii. Benjamin⁴, was born in Stratford, March —, 1721.

15. SAMUEL⁴ FAIRCHILD

15. SAMUEL⁴ FAIRCHILD, eldest son of Samuel³ and Ruth (Beach) Fairchild, was born in Stratford, Feb. 3, 1710. Married, April 5, 1745, Mary² Curtiss, born —; she was a daughter of John^{1*} and — (—) Curtiss, of Fairfield, Conn. Mary²

* "At a Proprietor's meeting of ye proprietors of Common undivided land in Stratford held by adjournment on the last Monday of November A. D. 1738," John Curtiss' name was number 49 on the list.

(Curtiss) Fairchild died in 1783, aged 64. Samuel⁴ Fairchild died in 1790, aged 80.

Children of Samuel⁴ and Mary (Curtiss) Fairchild:—

- +20. i. John Curtiss⁵, was born in Stratford, Feb. —, 1745-6. *See forward.*
- 21. ii. Abel⁵, was born in Stratford and baptized, Jan. —, 1753. Like his brother John he was with the 5th Regiment, 2d Company, which went to Ticonderoga, on Lake Champlain, N. Y., in 1775. In a list of persons who withdrew from the Congregational Society of North Stratford and of Trumbull and united with the Episcopal Church, with the dates and the places to which they went, Abel⁵ Fairchild is mentioned, March 20, 1788, as going to Ripton.
- 22. iii. Robert⁵, was born in Stratford.

20. JOHN CURTISS⁵ FAIRCHILD

20. JOHN CURTISS⁵ FAIRCHILD, eldest son of Samuel⁴ and Mary (Curtiss) Fairchild, was born in Stratford, Feb. —? 1745-6. Married, Nov. 6, 1768, Ruth Burch, born —, 1748; she was a daughter of — and — (—) Burch of —. Ruth (Burch) Fairchild died Oct. 28, 1804, in Stratford. John Curtiss⁵ Fairchild died same place, Feb. 22, 1825.*

In a list of returns for back pay, "5th Regiment, 2d Company, commanded by Lt. Col. Samuel Whiting, of Stratford, commencing 26th June, 1775, and ending 29th November," is found the name of Jno. Curtiss Fairchild. This company went to Ticonderoga, Lake Champlain, N. Y.

Children of John Curtiss⁵ and Ruth (Burch) Fairchild:—

- 23. i. William⁶, born in Stratford, —, 1769.
- 24. ii. John⁶, born in Stratford, —, 1770. Married, May 31, 1795, Abigail, called "Nabby," born Feb. 19, 1772, daughter of Samuel and Esther (Rowland) Patterson, of Weston, Conn. John⁶ Fairchild died in 1800. They had one child.
- 25. iii. Joseph⁶, born in Stratford, —, 1772. Died —, 1775.
- +26. iv. Sarah⁶, born in Stratford, Feb. 28, 1773. *See forward.*
- 27. v. Curtiss⁶, born in Stratford, —, 1775.

* Tombstones, Orcutt's *History of Stratford*, Vol. II, p. 339.

28. vi. Tabitha⁶, born in Stratford, —, 1777. Died —, 1778.
29. vii. Ruth⁶, born in Stratford, —, 1779. Married —, Mr. Brown.
30. viii. Benjamin⁶, born in Stratford, —, 1781.
31. ix. Reuben⁶, born in Stratford, —, 1784.

26. SARAH⁶ FAIRCHILD

26. SARAH⁶ FAIRCHILD, eldest daughter of John Curtiss⁶ and Ruth (Burch) Fairchild, was born in Stratford, Conn., February 28, 1773. Married, November 16, 1793,* John William⁹ Avery, born May 24, 1767, eldest son of Rev. Ephraim⁸ and Hannah (Platt) Avery, of Rye, N. Y.

John William⁹ Avery, died —, 1799, in New York. His widow, Sarah⁶ (Fairchild) Avery, died same place, May 6, 1837.

Children of John William⁹ and Sarah⁶ (Fairchild) Avery,—who were of the 10th generation in the Avery line and of the 7th generation in the Fairchild line:—

32. i. John William¹⁰⁻⁷, b. Sept. 24, 1794; d. early in life.
33. ii. Elisha Lothrop¹⁰⁻⁷, b. Feb. 27, 1796; d. Aug. 3, 1878; m. (1) Jane Gunning; m. (2) Sarah Coit.
34. iii. Samuel Putnam¹⁰⁻⁷, b. Jan. 1, 1797; d. July 24, 1832, who m. Hannah Anne Parke. *See Avery Family.*
35. iv. Sarah Elizabeth¹⁰⁻⁷, b. Nov. 3, 1798; she m. Ebenezer R. Dupignac.

* See *Valentine's Manual*, 1793.

SAMUEL PUTNAM¹² AVERY

Pedigree connection with Thomas¹ Fairchild, who came to Stratford, Conn., in 1638.

1. Great⁴-grandfather, Thomas¹ Fairchild, born in England, ——. Died Dec. 14, 1670. Great⁴-grandmother, — (Seabrook) Fairchild, born in England, — "It is not known when she died, but her last child was born in 1653."
2. Great⁴-grandfather, Samuel² Fairchild, born in Stratford, Aug. 31, 1640. Died, —, 1704. Great⁴-grandmother, Mary² (Wheeler) Fairchild, born in Stratford, Sept. 13, 1655. Died, —. *See Wheeler Family.*
3. Great⁴-grandfather, Samuel² Fairchild, born in Stratford, —, 1683. Died, —. Great⁴-grandmother, Ruth (Beach) Fairchild, born in Fairfield, Conn., —, 1685. Died Jan. 30, 1722.
4. Great⁴-grandfather, Samuel⁴ Fairchild, born in Stratford, Feb. 3, 1710. Died, —, 1790. Great⁴-grandmother, Mary (Curtiss) Fairchild, born in Fairfield, —, 1719. Died —, 1783.
5. Great²-grandfather, John Curtiss⁶ Fairchild, born in Stratford, Feb. —, 1745-6. Died Feb. 22, 1825. Great²-grandmother, Ruth (Burch) Fairchild, born in Stratford, —, 1751. Died Oct. 28, 1804.
6. Great-grandfather, John William⁸ Avery, born in Rye, N. Y., May 24, 1767. Died —, 1799. Great-grandmother, Sarah⁸ (Fairchild) Avery, born in Stratford, Feb. 28, 1773. Died May 6, 1837. *See Avery Family.*
7. Grandfather, Samuel Putnam¹⁰. Avery, born in New York, Jan. 1, 1797. Died July 24, 1832. Grandmother, Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery, born in New York, April 24, 1804. Died June 26, 1888. *See Park Family.*
8. Father, Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery, born in New York, March 17, 1822. Died Aug. 11, 1904. Mother, Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, born in New York, Dec. 1, 1825. Died April 29, 1911.
9. Samuel Putnam¹² Avery was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 7, 1847. Died in Hartford, Conn., Sept. 25, 1920.

THE PLATT FAMILY
OF
NEW HAVEN, CONNECTICUT

RICHARD' PLATT

1638

AUTHORITIES CITED

For the following record of the Platt Family in America, see:

Avery, Fairchild and Park Families.

Fairchild and Park Families.

Bolton's History of Rye.

Hall's Norwalk, pp. 186, 197.

Platt's Platt Lineage.

Savage's Genealogical Dictionary of New England, Vol. III, p. 444.

Selleck's Norwalk, pp. 336-7.

Wood's Huntington, L. I.

1. RICHARD¹ PLATT

1. RICHARD¹ PLATT came to America with his wife Mary in 1638, and landed at New Haven, Conn. In the records of the colony of New Haven we read that Richard¹ Platt had eighty-four acres of land in and around New Haven. In the Milford, Conn. records we read that he was enrolled among its first settlers, November 20, 1639, having four in his family. "He had probably brought with him, from England, four children, Mary², John², Isaac² and Sarah², for his first child in Milford was Epenetus², baptized July 12, 1640. Subsequently three other children were baptized, Hannah², Josiah² and Joseph²."

After his arrival in New Haven, Richard¹ Platt acquired possession among others, of several acres of land in what is now the best part of the Elm City (it was on the south side of Chapel street, near College street, adjoining the ground of Peter Pruden), in what was called the "Hertfordshire quarter." But the project of founding the township of Milford, nine miles west of the city, was soon after matured, and Richard¹ Platt threw in his lot among the sixty-six who formed themselves into a church organization, August 22, 1639, before they departed from New Haven, and proceeded to carry out the enterprise of settling that flourishing township. Richard¹ Platt's name is on the list of free-planters made out in 1646; he was chosen a deacon in the first church in Milford in 1639. It is recorded that his wife, Mary, died in January, 1676. His daughters, Mary² and Sarah², too, probably died before the father made his will, in 1683, for in it he makes bequests to their children instead of to them. He leaves something to each of his five sons in addition to what he had given them before. It is quite noteworthy that he left to one of his heirs a legacy "towards bringing up his son to be a scholar." This thought and this expression betray a pro-

found interest in the best things in life. The fact, too, that he left by will a Bible to each of the nineteen grandchildren, shows in rough pioneer days how sincere and earnest he was in his Christian profession and life, and that he regarded the divine word as a precious legacy to his descendants. He appears on the records as one of the witnesses to the will of Peter Prudden. Richard¹ Platt's estate was estimated at about £600. He died in 1684.

In August, 1889, at the commemoration of the settlement of Milford 250 years ago, Richard¹ Platt's name was mentioned with honor, and among the coping stones of the memorial bridge erected over the Wapawaug, to perpetuate the memory of the early settlers, a stone was placed with this inscription: "Deacon Richard Platt, obit. 1684, Mary his wife."

Two sons, John² and Josiah², are recorded among the original purchasers and proprietors of New Milford. John² finally went to Norwalk, Isaac² and Epenetus² to Huntington, L. I.; only Josiah² and Joseph² remained in Milford, the first home of the family.

Children of Richard¹ and Mary (—?) Platt:—

2. i. Mary², born in England, —. Married first, May 1, 1651, Luke Atkinson of New Haven. Mary² (Platt) Atkinson married, second, Jan. 3, 1667, Thomas Wetmore.
- + 3. ii. John², born in England. *See forward.*
4. iii. Isaac², born in England. Married first, March 12, 1640, Phebe Smith of Milford. He married, second, 1660? Elizabeth Wood, daughter of Jonas Wood* of Huntington, L. I. Isaac² Platt died July 31, 1691. Isaac² and Elizabeth (Wood) Platt had six children. There is no record of any children of Isaac² Platt by his first wife, Phebe Smith.

* Among the earliest settlers on Long Island was Jonas Wood, who came from Halifax, England, and was among the first residents of Hempstead in 1664. He moved to Southampton about 1649. From Southampton he removed to Huntington about 1665, and was one of the original purchasers of Copiague and the five necks east in 1657. Tradition states that he died between the 20th of April and the 18th of May, 1660. Wood's *Huntington, L. I.*, VII, p. 57.

"On or about the last day of July 1656" the Indian Sachem Asharakan sold to Jonas Wood, Wm. Rogers and Thomas Wilkes "all the meadows, fresh & salt, lying and being on the north side of Long Island from our former bounds, Cow Harbor brooke, to Nessequake River." This was called the Eastern Purchase. Wood's *Huntington, L. I.*, p. 57.

Isaac² Platt's name is mentioned second in his father's will. He and his younger brother Epenetus² are enrolled among the fifty-seven land owners of Huntington, L. I., in 1666. They were doubtless residents there some years before this date. In 1646 Gov. Theophilus Eaton of New Haven Colony, purchased of the Indians a tract of land on Mary Island, now called Eaton's Neck, and within the present limit of the town of Huntington. In 1653 conveyances were made by the Indians to actual settlers who founded the town. Connecticut claimed the jurisdiction of Long Island, under the charter of 1662, and did not relinquish it until the decision of the commissioners appointed to determine the bounds of the Duke of York's patent, in the fall of 1664. At a general assembly held at Hartford, May 12, 1664, Isaac² Platt, Epenetus² Platt, and many others residing on Long Island, were made free planters, "with liberty to act in the choice of public officers, for the carrying on of public affairs in that plantation." The inhabitants of Huntington were yet obliged to take out a patent of confirmation from Gov. Nicoll, November 30, 1666, in which the names of both Isaac² and Epenetus² Platt appear as patentees. In 1668, also, a new patent was taken out, the names of the brothers appearing among the patentees. Isaac² with his brother Epenetus² and others were imprisoned in New York by Gov. Andrus in 1681, for attending a meeting of delegates of the several towns to devise a means to obtain "a redress of grievances under his arbitrary rule." After their release, at a town meeting a vote was passed to cover their expenses.

In the town records of Huntington we read that "Isaac² Platt, September 2, 1679, received a deed of land from John Green"; also, "a deed of land from Jonathan Hamet, May 15, 1683." "In 1687 Isaac² Platt was Recorder of Huntington." In the census records, in 1755, Isaac² Platt appears as a holder of slaves; as also, Epenetus², Dr. Zophar and Mary Platt.

Isaac² Platt was a captain of Militia, and it is said of him that "he held every office of consequence in the gift of his townsmen." He lived in Huntington until his death.

5. iv. Sarah², born in England. Married first Thomas Beach. Married, second, Miles Merwin* and died in 1670. They had four children.
6. v. Epenetus², baptized in Milford, July 12, 1640. Married, 1667, Phebe Wood, daughter of Jonas Wood of Huntington, L. I. He died in 1693. They had nine children. The Huntington records say that Epenetus² Platt received a deed

* It was recorded in the *Genealogical Dictionary of New England* that six Merwins had graduated from Yale College.

of land from Gabriel Finch, Feb. 24, 1666, and a deed of land from Thomas Skidmore, Jan. 22, 1672. Epenetus¹ Platt filled many public positions with ability and credit. He was called Captain, and sometimes Lieutenant.

7. vi. Hannah², baptized in Milford, Oct. 1, 1643. Married, Oct. 6, 1663, Christopher Comstock. They had seven children. "Christopher Comstock was chosen and approved to kepe an ordinary for the entertayning of strangers."
8. vii. Josiah², baptized in Milford, 1645. Married, Dec. 2, 1669, Sarah Camfield. They had eight children.

It is stated in the church records that "Josiah² Platt and Sarah, his wife, were admitted to membership Oct. 22, 1672."

9. viii. Joseph², baptized in Milford, 1649. Married, May 5, 1680, Mary Kellogg, of Norwalk. They had four children.

Joseph² Platt is often called Lieut. Platt. His father left him the homestead, with a share of the arable and pasture lands to Josiah² Platt, the next older. A daughter, Mary², married Jedediah Hanford. Their daughter, Ann, married, Jan. 21, 1791, Josiah Hanford Fitch, born April 3, 1722, son of Jonathan and Deborah (Hanford) Fitch.

3. JOHN² PLATT

3. JOHN² PLATT was born in England. Married, June 6, 1660, Hannah, daughter of George Clark of Milford.

John² Platt was probably the oldest son of Richard¹ Platt as he is first mentioned in his father's will. He moved to Norwalk soon after his marriage, his name appearing on the records in 1660.

John² Platt, according to the record in the first book of grants and deeds, 1663, had a lot of four acres, two rods. He bought of Thomas Lupton, four more in 1665, Mar. the 9th. He was a freeman and a deacon of the church in 1668. In 1675, during the Indian troubles, it was determined that the meeting-house should be fortified and garrisoned for the security of the town. John² Platt was on the committee "for carrying on this work." In the early days of the town history an estimate was placed upon each one's possessions. John² Platt's estate was rated about £170.

*"He was one of the most noted public men in Norwalk history.

* Selleck's *Norwalk*, p. 336.

His deputyship to the General Court covered a period of several years. He was appointed, Oct. 16, 1680, a commissioner to view grounds with reference to a new plantation on the north of Stamford, Conn., and was one of the parties who laid out Danbury, Conn."

*"Also (Oct. 25, 1697) the towne made choyse of Matthew Marvin, Sergt. John² Platt, and Samuel Hayes, and John Benedict and Thomas Betts, who are by the towne desired to take care for the providing of a comfortable entertaynment of the Reverend Elders and Messengers when heare at the time of ordination; the charge of their entertaynment to be payd by the inhabitants of the towne."

Children of John² and Hannah (Clark) Platt:—

10. i. John³, born in Norwalk, June 1, 1664. Married, May, 1695, Sarah, born Nov. 3, 1670, daughter of Ephraim[†] and Mercie (St. John) Lockwood. They had four children.
11. ii. Josiah³, born in Norwalk, Dec. 28, 1667. Died young.
12. iii. Samuel³, born in Norwalk, Jan. 26, 1670. Married, June 18, 1712, Rebecca, daughter of Samuel Benedict of Danbury, Conn. Samuel³ Platt died Dec. 4, 1713, leaving one child.
Being "very sick," he made his will the day before he died, leaving his estate to his wife and daughter, decreeing that in the event of his daughter's death before having reached eighteen years of age, or in the event of her afterward dying single, her portion should finally fall to his two nephews, John⁴ and Josiah⁴ "sons to my brother John³ Platt, and to Joseph⁴ Platt, my brother Joseph³ Platt's son," which will was probated Dec. 15, 1713.‡
- + 13. iv. Joseph³, born in Norwalk, Feb. 17, 1672. *See forward.*
14. v. Hannah³, born in Norwalk, Dec. 15, 1674. Married Mr. Marvin, son of Miles and Sarah Marvin.
15. vi. Sarah³, born in Norwalk, May 20, 1678. Married, Sept. 6, 1704, Samuel Kellogg. They had eight children.
16. vii. Mary³, born in Norwalk, May 1, 1683. Married Mr. Benedict.

* Hall's *Norwalk*, p. 93.

† Ephraim Lockwood was the fifth child and fourth son of Robert and Susanna Lockwood, of Watertown, Mass., in 1630, and of Fairfield, Conn., in 1646. His father died in Fairfield, in 1658, and his mother, who married, second, Jeffrey Ferris of Greenwich, Conn., died there, Dec. 23, 1660. Selleck's *Norwalk*, p. 289.

‡ Selleck's *Norwalk*, p. 337.

13. JOSEPH³ PLATT

13. JOSEPH³ PLATT, fourth and youngest son of John² and Hannah (Clark) Platt, was born in Milford (or Norwalk), Conn., Feb. 17, 1672. Married, Nov. 6, 1700, Elizabeth Marvin, daughter of Matthew² and Elizabeth² Marvin. Elizabeth (Marvin) Platt died April 9, 1703, leaving one child.

Joseph³ Platt married, second, Jan. 26, 1704, Hannah, daughter of Rev. Thomas Hanford of Norwalk, Conn.

Joseph³ Platt seemed to be highly esteemed among his fellow citizens. A grant to him is recorded, Jan. 11, 1699, "of sixteen acres lying at West Rocks, west side of highway leading up to said Rocks." In the Indian troubles that annoyed the early settlers in New England, he, as a soldier, bore himself admirably well. He was too young to be in the "Dismal swamp fight," in King Philip's War. Some years after this fight, we find this in the town record, dated February 21, 1698: "Granted unto Joseph³ Platt, as he was a soldier out in the common service against the enemy, the town as a gratification for his good service, do give and grant unto him ten acres of land, to take it up a mile from the town, and where it lies free, not yet pitcht upon by an other persons." We find him called Captain Joseph³ in 1713. "Ye worshipful Joseph³ Platt, Esq.," was one of a committee to fix the limits of an upper village. After a visiting clergyman was at Norwalk, he was appointed to "attend ye Rev. Mr. Dickinson home into ye Jersies." He was a Justice of the Peace in 1726-7.

Child of Joseph³ Platt by his first wife, Elizabeth Marvin:—

17. i. Elizabeth⁴, born in Milford, Dec. 2, 1701.

Children of Joseph³ Platt, by his second wife, Hannah Hanford:—

18. ii. Hannah⁴, born in Milford, Oct. 29, 1704.

+ 19. iii. Joseph⁴, born in Milford, Sept. 9, 1706. *See forward.*

19. JOSEPH⁴ PLATT

19. JOSEPH⁴ PLATT, only son of Joseph³ and Hannah (Hanford) Platt, was born in Milford, Conn., Sept. 9, 1706 (Yale, 1733)*. Married, Hannah⁴ Whitman, daughter of Zechariah³ and his third wife, Hannah (—?) Whitman.†

Children of Joseph⁴ and Hannah (Whitman) Platt:—

20. i. Elizabeth⁴, born —; married Samuel, son of Samuel and Susannah (—) Fitch.
21. ii. Mary⁴, born —; married Jedediah Hanford.
22. iii. Esther⁴, born —; married Timothy, son of Gov. Fitch.
23. iv. Ann⁴, born —; married Stephen Thatcher.
24. v. Susannah⁴, born —; married Daniel Hanford. Daniel Hanford was the father of selectman Joseph Platt Hanford, who was born April 17, 1782, and died Aug. 10, 1870. Married Charlotte, daughter of William and Hannah (Marvin) St. John.
Mr. St. John's grandmother, on his father's side (Mrs. Joseph St. John), was the grandchild of William Hooker, who was the grandson of Rev. Thomas Hooker, the first minister of Cambridge, Mass., and a founder of the Connecticut Colony. The mother of Joseph Platt Hanford (Susannah Platt) was a granddaughter of Hannah (Mrs. Joseph³ Platt), a daughter of Rev. Thomas Hanford.‡
- +25. vi. Hannah⁴, born 1737. Married, 1762, Ephraim⁴ Avery. *See Avery Family.*

25. HANNAH⁵ PLATT

25. HANNAH⁵ PLATT, daughter of Joseph⁴ and Hannah⁴ (Whitman) Platt, was born —, 1737, in Milford, Conn.; married, 1762, Ephraim⁴ Avery. *See Avery Family.*

* Dexter's *Yale Biographies*.

† *Whitman Family*.

‡ Selleck's *Norwalk*, pp. 143-337.

SAMUEL PUTNAM¹² AVERY

Pedigree connection with Richard¹ Platt, who came to New Haven in 1638.

1. Great⁴-grandfather, Richard¹ Platt, born in England, ——. Died 1684. Great⁴-grandmother, Mary (—) Platt, born in England, ——. Died Jan. 1676.
2. Great⁴-grandfather, John² Platt, born in England, ——. Died ——. Great⁴-grandmother, Hannah (Clark) Platt, born ——. Died ——.
3. Great⁴-grandfather, Joseph³ Platt, born in Milford (or Norwalk), Conn., Feb. 17, 1672. Died ——. Great⁴-grandmother, Hannah (Hanford) Platt, born ——. Died ——.
4. Great⁴-grandfather, Joseph⁴ Platt, born in Milford, Conn., Sept. 9, 1706. Died ——. Great⁴-grandmother, Hannah⁴ (Whitman) Platt, born ——. Died ——. *See Whitman Family.*
5. Great²-grandfather, Ephraim⁸ Avery, born in Brooklyn, Conn., April 13, 1741. Died Rye, N. Y., Nov. 5, 1776. Great²-grandmother, Hannah⁴ (Platt) Avery, born Milford, Conn., 1737. Died Rye, N. Y., May 13, 1776. *See Avery Family.*
6. Great-grandfather, John William⁹ Avery, born Rye, N. Y., May 24, 1767. Died New York, 1799. Great-grandmother, Sarah (Fairchild) Avery, born Stamford, Conn., Feb. 28, 1773. Died New York, May 6, 1837. *See Fairchild Family.*
7. Grandfather, Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery, born New York, Jan. 1, 1797. Died New York, July 24, 1832. Grandmother, Hannah Anne (Parke) Avery, born New York, April 24, 1804. Died Jersey City, N. J., June 26, 1888. *See Parke Family.*
8. Father, Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery, born New York, Mar. 17, 1822. Died New York, Aug. 11, 1894. Mother, Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, born Dec. 1, 1825. Died ———, Conn., April 29, 1911.
9. Samuel Putnam¹² Avery, born Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 7, 1847. Died Hartford, Conn., Sept. 25, 1920.

THE WHEELER FAMILY
OF
NEW HAVEN AND STRATFORD,
CONNECTICUT

MOSES' WHEELER

1641

All the material relating to the Wheeler Family was selected from Orcutt's "*History of Stratford and Bridgeport*," Vols. I, II, published by the Fairfield County Historical Society, 1886.

1. MOSES¹ WHEELER

1. MOSES¹ WHEELER was born in England in 1598; came to New Haven, Conn., and had land apportioned to him in the first division that was made in that town, which occurred between the years 1641 and 1643.

At that time his family consisted of two persons, which must have been himself and wife, and his entire estate was fifty-eight pounds. There is nothing definite as to when he came to America or from what part of England, but the Wheeler family have been residents several hundred years in the County of Kent, southeast of and adjoining to London, and it would seem probable that he came with the New Haven Company from London, in 1638.

In May, 1648, Moses¹ Wheeler was an inhabitant of Stratford, Conn., for at that time Roger Ludlow presented to the General Court a request that Mr. Wheeler should be allowed to keep a ferry at Stratford, and the decision of the matter being referred to the next Fairfield Court, the request was granted. It appears from the records that the ferry was already established and the application to the Court was to secure the privilege as legal property.

The Fairfield Court gave a favorable order, for the ferry was established and running as appears by the following town record: "April 14, 1653. In consideration that the passage to the ferry was stopped up the town gave order to the townsmen to pull up the fence and make way for passengers where they had laid out the way formerly, and they promised to bear them out in that act."

The ferry was started by Moses¹ Wheeler, as heretofore stated, but while the ferry property belonged to Mr. Wheeler the privilege of conducting a ferry across the river did not.

The first deed of purchase which has come to light, was recorded in the first book of land records for the Colony of Hartford and was received by Moses¹ Wheeler dated April 12 (or 2), 1659, and seems to have been executed while the question of title was before the Court at Hartford.

It was a deed of "a parcel of ground lying along the side of Potatuck river, the east end of it being on a small river, which they say is Nayump, the west end bounding to a great rock (from which the name, *Nai-ompsk* 'point of rock' was derived) which reacheth the full length of all that plain piece of ground, and also to have two miles and a half of ground on the upland and all the meadow within that bounds."

Colonial Land Records, I, 213-214.

"Moses¹ Wheeler alledged that the purchase was made at the solicitation of the principal inhabitants of Stratford to prevent it from falling into other hands and that it cost him upwards of forty pounds."

C. H. Howdy in *Col. Rec.*, III, 164.

After the Court in 1659 decided that the territory belonged to Stratford without paying for it, the town allowed Moses¹ Wheeler to keep his land twenty-five years and then began to lay it into division lots among its own Members without regard to Moses¹ Wheeler, although he was one of their own citizens.

What the conditions for the privilege of the ferry were is not stated, but on November 21, 1670, the town saw fit to lease to "Moses¹ Wheeler, ship carpenter, the ferry with thirty or forty acres of upland and six of meadow joining to the ferry for twenty-one years, without tax or rate except six pence per anum during said lease."

The inhabitants were to be "ferried over for one half-penny per person, two pence per horse or beast." If he should lease the ferry at the end of twenty-one years, the town agreed to pay him for his improvements and take the property.*

* In "a list of inhabitants of Stratford, drawn up by the townsmen, & recorded by order from the Governor and Mr. Jones and Mr. Stowe 27th March, 1668, as followeth and diligently recorded by order from the townsmen this 28th March, 1668," Moses¹ Wheeler is listed as No. 41.

In October, 1684, the time had arrived when Moses¹ Wheeler's property was to be laid out into division lots among the members of the court held in 1659, but were brought to time by the General Court, by a profitable suggestion, thus: "This Court do recommend it to the town of Stratford to come to an agreement with Moses¹ Wheeler, sen., about the purchase he made of the Indians of a tract of land within their bounds," and some of the townsmen were required to appear at the next court and report the proposition of settlement to be ratified by the Court, which they did by giving Mr. Wheeler half of the land.

In January, 1690, a committee of the town was appointed, who leased "the Stratford Ferry to Samuel² Wheeler, son of Moses¹ Wheeler for 21 years from the 18th of November next." To this record Moses¹ Wheeler appended the following, he being then ninety-two years of age.

"To ye Committee of ye town of Stratford, Gent^m. These may inform you that for the natural love and affection y^t I have to my dearly beloved son Samuel² Wheeler, I doe by these presents transmit all my right, title and interest of ye ferry in the bounds aforesaid with all benefits and profitable improvements accrewing thereunto by virtue of any gift, grant or lease whatever in as full and ample manner as ever it was made to me or intended, as witness my hand the 16th day of January, 1690."

On "a record of each and every particular proprietors Rights in future commonage in Stratford adjusted by the Committee Chosen and appointed for that work and by them ordered to be Recorded for the future benefit and peace of the town, January 13th, 1699, by which Rule all future Divisions are to be laid out," we find that Moses¹ Wheeler's proportion was 31½ acres, Joseph Hawley's (brother-in-law), 14 acres, Serg^t. Samuel Fairchild's (son-in-law), 14 acres, and John Curtis's (father-in-law to the last named), 12½ acres."

Moses¹ Wheeler died in Stratford, March 1, 1698, aged 100 years. His property he gave, mostly, to his children in 1688, ten years before his death; Moses² Wheeler, Jr., Samuel² Wheeler

and Jacob Walker (son-in-law), receiving the tract of land bought by their father of the Indians, in Stratford, near Derby, forty years before, and Samuel², received, in the will, the homestead, and all pertaining to it. Moses², Jr., had previously, in 1674, received a dwelling and lands from his father.

Moses¹ Wheeler's will was dated February 19th, 1689-90, and in it, after disposing of his real estate and most of his personal property to Samuel², he says: "I give to my daughter Miriam², two pewter dishes: to my son, Moses², his wife, ye great pewter platter: to my daughter Mary², a bras kitle houlding ten or twelve gallons, the abridgement of the marter booke and Mr. Brook's his devices of Satan; to Elizabeth ye wife of my son Samuel² ye great kitle; to Mr. Israel Chauncey twenty shillings in silver."

1. MOSES¹ WHEELER

1. MOSES¹ WHEELER was born in England in 1598, and came to New Haven, Conn., as early as 1641. He married, probably in New Haven, Miriam Hawley*, sister of Joseph Hawley, and moved to Stratford, Conn., before May 18, 1648. Moses¹ Wheeler died in Stratford, Jan. 15, 1698, aged 100 years.

Children of Moses¹ and Miriam (Hawley) Wheeler:—

2. i. Elizabeth², was born in New Haven, Aug. 1, 1642. Married, Nov. 1660, Samuel Blakeman, born 1620, in Staffordshire, England, son of the Rev. Adam and Jane Blakeman. Samuel died Nov. 27, 1668. They had four children. His widow married, second, Dec. 6, 1670, Jacob Walker, born July, 1646, in Boston, Mass. They had six children. The last child, Mercy, born March 11, 1681, in Stratford, married Abraham Wooster, and was the mother of General David

* "It has been said that Miriam Wheeler was the sister of Joseph Hawley, the first in Stratford, but of this no certain knowledge is obtained." Joseph Hawley was born in England in 1603, and died in Stratford, May 20, 1690. Tradition says he married, in 1641, Catharine Birdsey, who died June 25, 1692. He died, in Stratford, May 20, 1690. *Hawley Record*.

Rev. B. L. Swan says: "There is more than a probability that Jane, wife of Rev. Adam Blakeman, Ann, wife of Philip Groves, and Miriam, wife of Moses¹ Wheeler, were also sisters of Joseph Hawley." *Orcutt's History of Stratford and Bridgeport*.

Wooster, killed at Danbury, Conn., in the Revolutionary War.

3. ii. Miriam², was born in New Haven, March 28, 1647. Married, in 1667*, James Blakeman (her brother-in-law) as his first wife. She died —. They had ten children. He married, second, April, 1708, Bathsheba, daughter of Stephen Pierson of Derby, Conn.
4. iii. Samuel¹, was probably born in Stratford, April 28, 1649. Married, May 29, 1678, Elizabeth, born June 5, 1656, daughter of Gabriel Harris of New London, Conn. Samuel² Wheeler died —? His homestead, as he described it in his will, dated Nov. 30, 1689, lay "at ye upper end of ye upper Island," in the Housatonic probably; and he gave all his property to his wife, leaving no children.
His widow Elizabeth (Harris) Wheeler, married, second, Sept. 16, 1703, Hugh Nesbitt, who died, March 7, 1710-11. On Nov. 20, 1712, Elizabeth (Harris) Wheeler-Nesbitt, married, third, Edward De La Ponte Poisson, merchant, at Derby, Conn. He died Aug. 27, 1717. Elizabeth (Harris) Wheeler-Nesbitt-Poisson, married, fourth, Richard Blackleach, who came to Stratford on or before 1678. She died in July, 1725, aged 69 years. Richard Blackleach died Nov. 4, 1731, aged 78.
5. iv. Moses², was born in Stratford, July 5, 1651. Married, Oct. 20, 1674, Sarah Nichols, born Dec. 1, 1651; she was a daughter of Caleb and Anne (Ward) Nichols, of Fairfield, Conn. Moses² Wheeler died Jan. 30, 1724-5, and the inventory of his estate amounted to £1463, 5, 6. Sarah (Nichols) Wheeler died July 23, 1718. They had eight children.
- + 6. v. Mary², was born in Stratford, Sept. 13, 1655. *See forward.*
7. vi. Joanna², was born in Stratford, March 5, 1658-9.

6. MARY² WHEELER

6. MARY² WHEELER, the fifth child of Moses¹ and Miriam (Hawley) Wheeler, was born in Stratford, Conn., Sept. 13, 1655. Married, —, Samuel² Fairchild, born Aug. 31, 1640; he was the eldest son of Thomas¹ and — (Seabrook) Fairchild, of Stratford. They had 4 children. *See Fairchild Family.*

* Orcutt's *Stratford*, says that the date of marriage of James Blakeman to Miriam² Wheeler was 1657, which is evidently an error for on that year date she was only 10 years of age.

SAMUEL PUTNAM¹² AVERY

Pedigree connection with Moses¹ Wheeler, born in England in 1598; was in New Haven, Conn., as early as 1641, and settled in Stratford, Conn., in 1648.

1. Great⁴-grandfather, Moses¹ Wheeler, born in England, 1598. Died in Stratford, Conn., Jan. 15, 1698. Great⁴-grandmother, Miriam (Hawley) Wheeler, born in England, —? Died in Stratford, —.
2. Great⁴-grandfather, Samuel² Fairchild, born in Stratford, Aug. 31, 1640. Died — 1704(?). Great⁴-grandmother, Mary² (Wheeler) Fairchild, born in Stratford, Sept. 13, 1655. Died —. *See Fairchild Family.*
3. Great⁴-grandfather, Samuel³ Fairchild, born in Stratford, 1683. Died —. Great⁴-grandmother, Ruth (Beach) Fairchild, born in Stratford, —, 1685(?). Died Jan. 30, 1722.
4. Great⁴-grandfather, Samuel⁴ Fairchild, born in Stratford, Feb. 3, 1710. Died —, 1790. Great⁴-grandmother, Mary (Curtiss) Fairchild, born in Fairfield, —, 1719. Died —, 1783.
5. Great²-grandfather, John Curtiss⁵ Fairchild, born in Stratford, Feb. —, 1745-6. Died Feb. 22, 1825. Great²-grandmother, Ruth (Burch) Fairchild, born in Stratford, —, 1751. Died Oct. 28, 1804.
6. Great-grandfather, John William⁹ Avery, born in Rye, N. Y., May 24, 1767. Died —, 1799. Great-grandmother, Sarah⁶ (Fairchild) Avery, born in Stratford, Feb. 28, 1773. Died May 6, 1837. *See Avery Family.*
7. Grandfather, Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery, born in New York, Jan. 1, 1799. Died July 24, 1832. Grandmother, Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery, born in New York, April 24, 1804. Died June 26, 1888. *See Parke Family.*
8. Father, Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery, born in New York, March 17, 1822. Died Aug. 11, 1904. Mother, Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, born in New York, Dec. 1, 1825. Died April 29, 1911.
9. Samuel Putnam¹² Avery, born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 7, 1847. Died in Hartford, Conn., Sept. 25, 1920.

THE LANE FAMILY
OF
MALDEN AND BILLERICA, MASSACHUSETTS

JOB' LANE

1643

AUTHORITIES CITED

Billerica, Mass. Records.

General Court Records.

History of Malden, Massachusetts.

Lane Family Papers (W. H. Whitmore).

Malden, Mass. Records.

Massachusetts Archives.

Massachusetts Records.

*Memorials of the Dead in Boston, Massachusetts, King's Chapel Burial
Grounds*, p. 303.

Middlesex County, Massachusetts, Wills.

Winthrop's Journal.

1. JOB¹ LANE

1. JOB¹ LANE was born in England about 1620 and owned lands in Rickmansworth, Hertfordshire, about eighteen miles from London.

Job¹ Lane was distinguished as "master-carpenter," "housewright," "artificer" and "bridge-builder." He first appears at Sekonk, Mass., in 1643, where he was estimated worth fifty pounds for the purpose of receiving subsequent grants of land, and where he joined the Sekonk Combination, 3d 5 mo. 1644. He was at Rehoboth, Mass., 9th 4 mo. 1645, and drew lot No. 28. He was of Dorchester, Mass., and returned to England and was married there in 1647.

"A full manifestation of Thomas Howell's desire on his death bed," June 6, 1647, his property to be divided between his wife and children, names "Job¹ Lane his kinsman now in England" executor. "The coppie of Job¹ Lane's refusall to accept of the executorship of Thomas Howell's last will and testa^{mt} directed to the Gov^rnor, Oct. 19, 1647," shows him to be a carpenter of Dorchester, Mass. Thomas Howell was of Marshfield. Inventory, May 31, 1648; amount £38, 2 s.

Job¹ Lane settled in Malden, Mass., near the time of its incorporation, May 2, 1649. "In answer to the petition of seull inhabitants of Mistick Side, their request is granted viz. to be a district town of themselves, and the name thereof to be Maulden."—*Gen. Court Record*.

A curious entry in the *Mass. Bay Colony Records* has reference to a Negro servant Eneroe who having been set free by his former master Clement, had bound himself to Mr. Lane, May 28, 1651, for nine years. Again May 18, 1653, "In ans^r to the petition of Job Lane in behalf of Ebedmeleck his servant for the remittment of the rigor of the lawe, &c. the Court judgeth it mete that the

sayd Ebedmeleck, for his stealing vittalls and breaking open a window on the Lord's day, shall the next lecture day be whipt five stripes."—*Mass. Records*, 3: 306 and 4: 137.

A fragmentary correspondence between Job¹ Lane and the custodians of the English estate is among the interesting papers treasured in the family at Bedford, Mass. Letters from Jeremiah Gould, dated at London in 1653 and 1654, to his "Loving Friend Job¹ Lane," contain much family history. He writes June 6, 1654, "You wonder that your Brother James should delude me to make away your estate, and withal wished me not to surrender the premises to him—Your uncle assured me that the annuity belonged not to you but to your brother Edward if he were alive, etc." Among Job¹ Lane's other correspondents in England were Mr. Smith of Gildersome, Yorkshire, to whom he wrote Aug. 13, 1670; John Harwood, his attorney, from whom he received letters dated Feb. 18, 1665, Mar. 14, 1671-2, Feb. 6, 1677, and May 6, 1677; Marmaduke Reyner, his second wife's uncle, who wrote May 17, 1676; John Dickenson of Gildersome, his friend and agent, to whom he wrote Aug. 13, 1670, Oct. 23, 1678, June 19, 1695, and from whom he received letters dated Mar. 6, 1670, Feb. 20, 1673, Apr. 29, 1675, Feb. 6, 1677, Oct. 23, 1678, Apr. 1, 1679, Apr. 16, 1695, and Nov. 3, 1696. Job¹ Lane received a letter from his cousin John Lane, dated Mar. 3, 1678, questioning "whether the heathen have yet been subdued or not," who also adds, "I have been several times with the lord of the manor to search the court rolls,—and he told me that he cannot find the surrender that my uncle George Lane made to my uncle John Lane—You desire to know how my cousin Baker has disposed of the estate, and I so understand she did surrendr it into the hands of the Lord of the manor, and then did take it up for her own life to one Matthew Baker, kinsman of William Baker, and I think the land is past recovery." John Dickenson, Jr., wrote him in 1677, respecting "Nonconformity in England," and affirmed May, 1679, that "The Gospel is promulgated."—*Lane Family Papers*, by William H. Whitmore, Gen. Reg. XI and XVII.

Records show that Job^l Lane's "forfeiture was abated and fine remitted," May 23 and Nov. 13, 1655; he was made freeman May 14, 1656; bought land in Malden of Nicholas Parker, Sept. 22, 1656; was attorney to collect five pounds for William Wilkins of Chesham, Bucks county, England, Apr. 6, 1658; was mentioned in the inventory of George Mumings, 17th, 7 mo., 1658. He contracted with the selectmen of Malden, Nov. 11, 1658, "to erect and finish upp a good strong Artificial meeting-house, to be completed before 20 Sept. next ensuing."

CONTRACT FOR THE ERECTION OF THE FIRST
MEETING HOUSE IN MALDEN

"Articles of agreement made and concluded ye 11th day of ye ninth mo. 1658 betweene Job^l Lane of Malden on the one partie, carpenter, and William Brakenbury, Lieut. John Wayte, Ensigne J. Sprague and Thomas Green, Senior, Selectmen of Malden, on the behalf of the towne, on the other partie, as followeth":

"Imprimis: The said Job^l Lane doth hereby covenant, promise and agree to build, erect and finish upp as good strong Artificial meeting House of thirty-three foot Square, sixteen foot stud between joints, with dores, windows, pulpitt, seats and all other things whatsoever in all respects belonging thereto as hereafter is expressed.

1. That all the sells, girts, mayne posts, plates, Beames and all other principal Timbers shall be of good and sound white or Black oake.
2. That all the walls be made upp on the outside with clapboards, well dressed, lapped and nayled. And the Inside to be lathed all over and well struck with clay, and upon it with lime, and hard up to the wall-plate, and also the beame fellings as need shall be.
3. The roof to be covered with boards and short shinglings with a territt on the topp about six foot squar to hang the bell in, with rayles about it, the floor to be made tite with planks.
4. The bell to be fitted upp in all respects and Hanged therein fitt for use.
5. Thre dores in such places as the sayed Selectmen shal direct, viz. east, west and south.
6. Six windows below the girt on thre sids, namely, east, west and south, to contayne sixteen foot of glass in a window, with Leaves; and two windows on the south side above the girt on each side of the deske, to contayne six foot of glass A piece; and two windows under each plate on the east, west and north sides, fitt (to) containe eight foote of glass a piece.

7. The pullpitt and cover to be of wainscott to conteyne ffive or six persons.
8. The deacons seat allso of wainscott with door, and a table joynd to it to fall downe for the Lords Supper.
9. The ffloor to be of strong Boards throughout and well nayled.
10. The House to be fitted with seats throughout, made with good planks, with rayles on the topps, boards at the Backs and timbers at the ends.
11. The underpinning to be of stone or bricks, and pointed with lyme on the outside.
12. The Alleyes to be one from the deacons seat through the middle of the house to the north end, and another cross the house ffrom east to west sides, and one before the deacon's seat; as is drawne on the back side of this paper.
13. And the said Job¹ [Lane] to provide all boards, Timber, nayles, Iron work, glass, shingles, lime, hayre, clapboards, bolts, locks and all other things whatsoever needful and belonging to the finyshing of the said house, and to rayse and finish it up in all respects before the twentie of September next ensuing, they allowing help to rayse it.

And the sd Selectmen for themselves, on behalf of the town in consideration of the said meeting house so finished, do hereby covenant, promise and agre to pay unto the sd Job¹ Lane or his Assigns the sume of one hundred and ffifty pounds in corne, cordwood and provisions sound and merchantable att price currant, and fatt cattle on valuacon by Indifferent men, unless themselves agree the prices:

In Manner following that is to say, ffiftie pound before the first of ye second mo. next ensuing, And ffiftie pounds befor the first of ye last mo. which shall be in the year one thousand six hundred 59, and other ffifty pounds before the first of ye second mo. which shall be in the year one thousand six hundred and sixtie. And it is further Agreed that when the sd house is finished in case the sd Job¹ [Lane] shall find and judgeth to be worth ten pounds more, that it shall be referred to Indifferent workmen to determine, unless the sayed selectmen shall se just cause to pay the sd ten pounds without such valuacon.

In witness wherof the partys to these presents have Interchangeably put their hands the day and yeare above written,

William Brakenbury

Joh Sprague

Joh Wayte

Witness,

Joseph Hills

and Greshom hills." (see *History of Malden*)

In 1682 the parish of Malden voted "that the meeting house be repaired to keep out the weather and to save the sills from rotting." It was in possession of a church bell at this time which

was placed upon Bell Rock, an elevated ledge near which the meeting house stood and which still bears the old name.

Job¹ Lane purchased five acres of land in Malden from Michael Smith, the last day of the 11th mo. 1659, contracted to build a bridge over Concord river to be completed before the close of the year 1659, "with abutments at each end suitable for the passing over with carts," and engaged to raise the frame of a house for Thomas Robinson of Scituate, Aug. 25, 1660.

He was appointed attorney for his brother James² Lane of Malden, turner, Nov. 19, 1660. He received from his uncle John Lane's will, Aug. 7, 1661, thirty pounds: "and if my kinsman Job¹ [Lane] dye before his Lagacie shall become due, then the thirty pounds Lagacie shall be paid to his wife; if shee dye, then to his children."

Petition, 7th, 4th mo., 1662, signed Job¹ Lane among nine inhabitants of Malden for the rest: "Our most humble Petie'on to this much honoured Court is: That a Tract of lands of About fower Miles Square at A place Called Pennycooke may be Granted as A Addic'on to us, for our better Support And In-couragement in the Service of Christ & the Countrie.

The Deputyes thinke not meete to grant this pet.

William Torrey, Cleric."

Mass. Archives, 112 : 147.

Job¹ Lane had paid the remainder of a bill to Christian Hooper, Jan. 15, 1662-3, and with Theodore Atkinson he agreed to build a draw-bridge, Mar. 6, 1662-3.

Job¹ Lane removed, about 1664, from Malden to the Indian Shawshine, a part of ancient Cambridge till incorporated Billerica, May 29, 1655, and Bedford since Sept. 23, 1729.

The Massachusetts Bay Company, under John Winthrop, governor, and Thomas Dudley, deputy governor, left England in April, 1629, landed at Salem in June, 1629, removed to Charlestown in July, 1629, and settled in Boston, Sept. 17, 1630, and in Newtowne, 1631. Gov. Winthrop returned to Boston and reproved his deputy in 1632, "that he did not well to bestow so

much cost about wainscoting and adorning his house in the beginning of a plantation, both in regard of the public charges and for example." The removal of the governor's extremely rude frame house from Newtowne to Boston was the cause of a misunderstanding between the governor and the deputy, but matters were accommodated to the content of both parties, Sept. 4, 1632. The Colonial General Court, Nov. 2, 1637, granted Winthrop and Dudley one thousand acres of land each, as a gratuity for valuable services in laying the foundation of the Colony.

We have Gov. Winthrop's graphic account of the location of these outlying farms. The two eminent men came together from Boston by way of Concord to Shawshine and fixed on the right bank of the Concord river their respective claims.

January, 1637-8. "Going down the river about four miles, they made choice of a place for one thousand acres for each of them. They offered each other the first choice, but because the deputy's was first granted and himself had store of land already the governor yielded him the choice. So at the place where the deputy's land was to begin, there were two great stones which they called the Two Brothers, in remembrance that they were brothers by their children's marriage and did so brotherly agree, and for that a little creek near those stones was to part their lands."—*Winthrop's Journal*, Apr. 24, 1638.

The General Court enlarged the grant to the governor by an additional two hundred acres, May 2, 1638, and still later, June 6, 1639, added sixty acres at the "great meadows."

May 2, 1638. "It was ordered by the p'sent Court that John Winthrop Esq^r. the p'sent governo^r shall have 1200 acres of land whereof 1000 acres was formerly graunted him; & Thomas Dudley Esq^r. the Deputy governo^r has 1000 acres graunted him by a former court, both of them about 6 miles from Concord northwards; the said governo^r to have his 1200 acres on the southerly side of two great stones standing neare close by the ryver's side that comes from Concord."

Mr. Dudley's farm was also increased to fifteen hundred acres and was sold by him, Feb. 28, 1651-2, for £110.

Gov. John¹ Winthrop of Massachusetts died Mar. 26, 1649, at 63 years. His son, John² Winthrop, Jr., settled first at Ipswich, Mass., in 1633, but was made governor of Saybrook

plantation, Connecticut, in 1635. He founded New London in 1645 and became governor of Connecticut in 1657. His son, Fitz John^s Winthrop sold the entire Winthrop grant to Job¹ Lane, Aug. 2, 1664, for 230 pounds current money in New England.

Mr. Lane paid for the estate by building Mr. Winthrop a mansion house and barn at New London. He was put in possession of it by John Parker, Aug. 8, 1664, and took receipt for payment July 4, 1665. The deed written on vellum, with Fitz John^s Winthrop's unique seal upon it is still preserved in the possession of Job¹ Lane's descendants.

THE WINTHROP DEED

"This Indenture Made the second day of August in the year of Or Lord one thousand Six hundred Sixty & ffour in the Sixteenth yeare of the Reigne of Or Soureigne Lord Charles the Second by the grace of God of England, Scotland, France & Ireland King, defender of the ffaith &ct, between ffitz John Winthrop of New London in the Colony of Connecticut in New England Esquire on the one part & Job¹ Lane of Malden in the County of Middlesex in New England Carpenter on the other part Wineseth that the said ffitz John Winthrop for & in Consideration of the Sum of Two Hundred & Thirtie pounds currant money in New England by the value there of in Cattle & other currant pay in New England to him in hand before the sealing and delivery here of well & truly paid by the above named Job¹ Lane where of & wherewith the said ffitz John Winthrop doth acknowledge himself to be fully Satisfied contented & paid & there of doth acquit & discharge the said Job¹ Lane his heires & assignes and every of them for ever by these pr'sents Hath given granted, bargained, Sould, Enfoeffed & confirmed & by these p'sents Doth fully clearly & absolutely give, grant, bargain, sell, enffoffe, confirm unto the said Job¹ Lane his heirs & assignes forever a parcel of upland & meadow lying & being near unto Billerica & Containeth Twelve hundred Acres be it more or be it lesse, & is bounded by the lands form'ly granted unto Thomas Dudley Esquire Easterly & by Concord River westerly & by Concord River Southerly & by Billerica comon Easterly. Of the wth meadow, Sixty Acres be it more or lesse lyeth about a mile Easterly from the before mentioned land & meadow to be bargained & Sould, with the priviledges and appurtenances thereto belonging & all the estate, right, title, interest, use, p'perty, possession, claim & demand what soever of him the said ffitz John Winthrop of in or to the same or any part or parcel thereof.

To Have & To Hold the said parcel of upland & meadow with in the same, & the before named meadow Easterly from the said upland & meadow, adjoining as it is bounded & lyeth recorded in the book of Records &

described by —ett with the privileges & appurtenances thereto belonging unto the said Job¹ Lane his heirs & assigns To his & their owne p^rper use & behoof for ever. And the said ffitz John Winthrop for himself his heirs executo^{rs} & administrato^{rs} doth covenant promise & grant to & with the said Job¹ Lane his heirs & assigns by thse p^rsents in manner & form as followeth that he the said ffitz John Winthrop at the time of the grant, bargain & Sale of the p^rmisses & untill the deliv^y here of unto the said Job¹ Lane to the use of him his heirs & assigns for ever, was the true & rightfull owner of the above bargained p^rmisses, & that the same is free and clear & freely & clearly acquitted & discharged of & from all and all manner of former & other gifts, grants, bargains, Sales, mortgages, leases & of & from all & singular charges, Rents, titls, troubles, incumbrances & demands whatsoever had made, done, or suffered to be done by the said ffitz John Winthrop or any other person or psons whatsoever by his or their Act, means, default consent or p^r cur^rmt. And that the said ffitz John Winthrop his heires executo^{rs} & administrato^{rs} the said bargained p^rmisses & every part & parcel there of unto the said Job¹ Lane his heirs & assigns Against all & every pson & psons whatsoever lawfully claiming or to claim any estate, right, title or interest of in or to the same or any part or parcel thereof Shall & will warrant & forever defend by these p^rsent.

And That the said Job¹ Lane his heires & assigns the said bargained p^rmisses, privileges & appurtenances thereto belonging. Shall & may from henceforth forever, Lawfully peaceably & quietly have, hold, use, profess, & — owne p^rper use without the let, Sute, trouble, molestation, denyall, contradiction, eviction, or disturbance of the said ffitz John Winthrop or any other pson or psons whatsoever claiming p^rtending to have any estate, right, title, interest, claim or demand whatsoever of in or to the same or any part thereof.

In Witness whereof the said ffitz John Winthrop hath here unto set his hand & Seale the day and yeare above written.

Fitz J. Winthrop."

There is no evidence that the Winthrop Farm was occupied till bought by Job¹ Lane. He owned a saw mill on the farm and built a dwelling house on the eastern side of it. An ancient Lane house now standing and occupied as a family residence is situated on the rising point of land on the right hand side of the road about a mile and a half north from the junction of the main street of Bedford with the roads to Concord and Billerica. The Winthrop Purchase was estimated to contain 1260 acres and continued intact until the death of Mr. Lane in 1697, when it was divided among his heirs. In 1707 it was surveyed for the first time and found to contain 1500 acres.

Job¹ Lane took a receipt from Thomas Butterfield, 10th 5 mo., 1665. He bought from Joseph Rock, Feb. 29, 1666, the Thomas Coytmore mill in Malden and all the privileges attending it. This "corne-mill" was built as early as 1640. The dam flowed Spy Pond. The mill stood below at tide navigation to which the water was brought in canals or sluices.

Mr. Lane received as apprentice John Quinne from county of Cork, Ireland, who personally bound himself in June, 1666. He took as apprentice, June 5, 1667, Thomas Austin, who was transferred to him for seven years from his arrival in the ship *Desire*, May 9, 1667, by Capt. Rowland Bevens, to whom Austin's widowed mother had bound him Feb. 26, 1667.

SALE OF SLAVE MERCURY

"Know al men by these p'sents that I Jobe¹ Lane of Malden in the county of Midelsex in New Engl^d Carpenter, acknowledge my Selfe to be indebted unto John Leverett of Boston in the County of Suffolke in the Massachusetts Collony in New Engl^d for a negro boy called mercury the sum of thirty pounds of Current money of new Engl^d the which sum I the sayd Jobe¹ Lane p'mise to pay unto the sayd Leverett at his now dwelling house in boston, or in other pay to his Content as for money, or to his heyres executors or assigns; for the true performance of the same I doe hereby fyrmely bynd myselfe my heyres execcuors & assignes in the penalty of sixty pounds of like currant money. In witnes where of I have hereunto set my hand & Seale this 12th day of June 1667.

Job¹ Laine."

(Sealed with a Pine tree shilling)

Mr. Lane, "an able and honest artificer," contracted, Jan. 11, 1667-8, to build Great Bridge over Billerica river, the work to be completed before Sept. 29 following, and he to receive "seven score and five pounds sterling; ten in cash, ten in wheat, ten in malt, and the remainder in corne and cattle."

Job¹ Lane, for the sum of 155 pounds and other considerations for which he received a receipt in full June 6, 1668, bought of Jachin Reyner of Rowley, New England, co-partner with his sister Anna Reyner (second) wife of Job¹ Laine, one-fourth part of housing and lands to which said Reyner was heir in his mother's right, situated in the townships of Edgeton and Welburne, Yorkshire, Eng., and occupied by Thomas Boyse. The Rev.

John Reyner of Dover, N. H., as tenant for life, had conveyed one-half of the rents of this estate to his son Jachin Reyner, Aug. 7, 1660, and one half to his son-in-law Job^l Laine, Aug. 5, 1662.

Mr. Lane was charged by John Harwood with expenses in looking after the estates in England, June 24, 1673. His proposition, 1674, to the town of Billerica, "to abate him annually part of his dues to Mr. Whiting was propounded to the town, but not accepted." He was indebted to the estate of Joseph Hills of Malden, Oct. 5, 1674.

The Winthrop-Lane Farm lying remote from the settlements at Concord and Billerica was exposed to attack by the Indians during King Philip's War, 1675. "Job^l Lane is impressed," but was doubtless allowed to protect his own house.—*Billerica Records*.

The 8th, 8 mo., 1675, Job^l Lane was allowed to stockade his dwelling and be freed from fortifying other appointed garrisons, and empowered to keep a "watch" and examine persons as other watches do. The 14th, 8 mo., 1675, also Job^l Laine was authorized "to fortify his owne house and to have two soldiers for garrison-men to defend his house in case ye country could spare them."

Certificate of sale: "This may certify to all persons that I, Mary Lynden of Boston, do sell all my right in a boy called Torrey to Job^l Lane, given to me according to a County Court record, 1676.

Mary Lynden."

Mr. Lane was deputy for Billerica to the General Court, Aug. 9, 1676, and in 1679; was selectman 1676, '7, '9, '81; was classed among the ten families under George Farley, tithing-man, 8th, 8 mo., 1677, whose duty it was "to examine the several families and see whether their children and servants were taught in the principles of religion;" took oath of fidelity to the state, 4th, 12 mo., 1677; sold to W. Green, Apr. 2, 1678, English estate received from Jachin Rayner, June 6, 1668; had family friends in the Parliament party, England, Sept. 26, 1678.

John Harvard devised half of his estate and his library of 300 volumes in 1638, as the foundation of Harvard College and the name Newtowne was changed to Cambridge in honor of the old English university town. It is related that when Charles Chauncy, president of Harvard College from Nov. 27, 1654 to Feb. 19, 1671-2, had sacrificed his own and his family's pecuniary prospects by his devotion to the college interests, he had an estate with £60 income given him by a Mr. Lane, probably a relation of Bristol, England. It is said that Job¹ Lane erected one of the wooden college buildings. Old Harvard Hall was rebuilt of brick in 1672 by the contributions of the Colony at an expense of £1890. When the town of Billerica had paid a part of their subscription and wished to excuse their delay in forwarding the remainder, the selectmen appointed Mr. Lane, the 14th, 8 mo., 1678, "to returne and answ^r to y^e Hon^d generall Court upon y^e 18th day of this instant, in reference to our contribution to y^e Colledge." He also "received 90 pounds for the colledg" Mar. 30, 1683.—*Mass. Records* 5 : 393.

Mr. Lane was taxed in Billerica, 1679, for two polls and assessed £2, 13 s. more than any other man. He was notified by John Dickenson Apr. 1, 1679, that rents in England had been received for six years, 1673 to 1678. In 1680, he was one of the appraisers of the goods of his brother James² Lane, deceased, of Casco Bay.

Job¹ Lane's son John² Lane, married in 1682, when Mr. Lane appears to have returned to his estate in Malden. Here he was selectman, 1683, '6, '7; took Robert Stuke apprentice for three years, July 1, 1685; was deputy from Malden, 1685 and '92. The pay of the representative to the Legislature in those days was derived from the town. Malden, May 19, 1686, "paid to Mr. Laine for debutys charges for the year '85, £1, 14 s. 7 d." and at another time the same year for like service, £2, 5 s. 6 d. He was apportioned by lot land in the commons of Malden, May, 1695; and bought real estate of J. Green, Aug. 7, 1695. He also bought out this year, some interest of Mrs. Martha, widow of John Coggan, in the mill built by her first husband Thomas Coytemore, brother-in-law of Gov. John Winthrop, which he

bequeathed to his daughter Dorothy and her husband Edward Sprague.

Letters from England for Mr. Job¹ Lane of Malden were to be left, Feb. 9, 1694-5 "at Mrs. Mary Ardells at her house in the Town Dock over against Mr. Thomas Clark, brazier, Boston." At this date William Ardell had a sister in England, viz. Mrs. Frances Thompson. He was a merchant in Boston, 1684, and sheriff of the Province of N. H., 1698.

Job¹ Lane was a man of marked intelligence, great business capacity and commanding influence in church and colony. Late in life he became infirm through age and paralysis, so that important papers were signed by his initials only, J. L. His amanuensis was Rev. Jabez Fox of Woburn, who married Judith Reyner, half sister of Mrs. Lane. John Dickinson declined Apr. 7, 1695, to pay a draft presented by Mrs. Frances Thompson because the writing was different from Mr. Lane's usual hand. When Dickinson wrote about the matter, Apr. 16, 1695, Mr. Lane replied June 19, 1695:

"By reason of my weakness and other infirmity of old age attending me for the space of six years past, I have wholly been incapacitated to do anything for you about that business which is above a hundred miles from me—. By reason that I am lame in my right hand and have almost lost the use thereof, you may only expect my mark to my letters and bills for the future.

The mark of Job. J. L. Laine.

Seal: a hand between three crescents."

Mr. Job¹ Lane died at Malden, 23 Aug. 1697, aged 77 years.—*Tombstone.*

His will, signed Sept. 28, 1696, was presented for probate at Charlestown, Oct. 21, 1697.

"I, Job Lain of malden In ye county of middlesex be in a comfortable measure of health, of sound mind and perfect memory, Trough God's goodness to me: not knowing how sune it may pleas God to take me out of this world, doe make and ordain this my last will and Testament in manner and form following:

first and principally I commit my soule into the hands of almighty God, As my father and deer Redeemer; my body I commit to the Earth to be decently buried at the discretion of my executor and friends—and as Touching the disposal of all such temperall estate as it hath pleased God to bestow upon me I give and dispose thereof as followeth: first, I will that

my just debts and funeral charges shall be paid and discharged. Itim I give unto my very Loving wife *Annah* ten pounds p^r yeer yearly and every yeer in currant money of newingland to be paid her by my executor at her dwelling hous so long as she continueth a widdo and in my name: but If my wife seath cause to marry again, then my will is that my executor shall pay her five pounds per year in money during her natural life.

Itim, I give unto my sonn *John^s Lain* all the land I have in England in Yorksheer to him and his hairees for ever: also I Give to my sonn *John^s Lain* Half my farm that Is within the bounds of billereca, with my dwelling hous he now lives in and outhousing and orchard and all ye upland he now improves, the rest of his part of upland shall be in that part which lyeth west: also baker's meddo and the delight meddow and the Swamp meddo at the upperend of crooked meddo and the west side of crooked meddo until he come to a point of upland that points over to a little Rocke Island whare there is a hole like a well of water, and two acres of meddo further Reeching from side to side of said meddo: and the rest of his part of meddo to be proportionally in one meddo and in another,—all of which I give to him & his hairees for ever.

Itim, I give to my daughter *Sarah's^s sonn Samuel fitch* one quarter part of my abovesaid farm at bilereca both meddo and upland with a dwelling house he now liveth in and a field fenced in and a little orchard and the east side of crooked meddo, and to the first dich neere the middle of the meddo, and so to run down to farlowes meddo: And from ye dich at the lower end of his orchard To baker's meddo & all the land eastward from his hous to the end of my line. And the rest of his proportion both of meddo and upland he shall have sum in one place sum in another; But if the said *Samuel fitch* doe dy and leave no issue of his one body, then my will is that all that estate which I give him shall be equally divided to and amongst my surviving children: notwithstanding his wife shall have the improvement of the one half of the estate which I give him during her natural life: that lands which I give to *Samuel fitch* I give to him and his hairees forever.

Itim, I give to my daughter *Jemima's sonn Matthew whipple* one quarter part of my said farm at bilereca, part of his upland to ly at a place comonly called the *two brothers*, and to come to a gutter that comes out of flage meddo, including flage meddo and the Swamp meddo, to the two brothers: and the north end of crooked meddo all of it that is not already disposed of, the rest of his part both of upland and meddo shall be where it may be most convenient for him: all of which I give to him and his hairees forever, but if the said *mathew whipple* doe dy and leave no issue of his body, then my will is that all that estate which I give him shall be equally divided to and amongst my surviving children: notwithstanding his wife if he leaveth any shall have the improvement of the one half of that estate which I give him during her natural life.

Itim, I give unto the children of my daughter *Mary Every* one third part of those two farms in Malden both housing, upland and meddo now in the

possession of John Chamberlain and Samuel Wait, and one quarter part of those lots latly laid out to me one ye land formerly malden common, to them and their haire forever.

Item, I give unto my daughter *Elizabeth Every's* children one third part of my two farms in malden both housing, upland and meddo now in the possession of John Chamberlain and Samuel Wait, and one quarter part of all lots latly laid out to me one the land formerly malden common to them and their haire forever.

Item, I give unto the children of my daughter *Annah Foster* one third part of these two farms in Malden both housing, upland and meddo now in the possession of John Chamberlain and Samuel Wait, and one quarter part of all those lots latly laid out to me the one land formerly malden common to them and their haire forever: further my will is that the fathers and mothers of these children last mentioned shall have the Improvement of this there estate until they come to age and then ye said children to have there parts of said estates as they come to age when ye sons are twenty years old and ye daughters eighteen years of age.

Item, I give unto my daughter *dorety sprague* the east end of my dwelling hous I now live In to the Chimney from the bottom to ye top, with my mill and all my land adjoining, and my salt march and land adjoining thereto to her & her haire forever, and likewise the west end of my dwelling hous I do give to her after my wife leaveth it: and if my daughter *dorety* doe dy and leave no issue of her body, then my will is that all that estate which I doe give her shall be equally divided to and amongst my surviving children, notwithstanding her husband shall have the improvement of the one half of the estate which I give her during his natural life.

Item, I give unto my daughter *Elizabeth Every* my best woosted Rugg and I give to her daughter *Elizabeth* one of my best peutar plattars and to her daughter *Rachall* one peutar platter.

Item, I give to my sonn *William Every's* daughter *Mary* one peutar plattar and to his daughter *Sarah* one peutar plattar. I have already given to my daughter *Elizabeth Every* my bason In use.

Item, I give to my daughter *Anna foster* one peutar plattar.

Item, I give to my daughter *dorety* my grate brass kittel she returning to her mother the kittel she now hath. Also I give to my daughter *Dority* one quarter part of my —.

Further my will is that my loving wife shall have one half part of the remaining part of my moveable estate during her natural life and that she shall have the first choice when it is divided, and also my wife shall have all the wood in my home pasture for her own fireing excepting sufficient shade trees for cattle—the Rest of my moveable estate shall be divided equally amongst the children of my daughters *Mary Every*, *Elizabeth Every*, and *Annah Foster*, and also that part of estate which my wife leaveth at her deceas shall be equally divided amongst those last mentioned children: further my will is that all those my children and Grandchildren whom I have bequeathed my estate unto shall be posest of the same

according to this my last will within two months after my decease: further if my servant William Matthewes continue a faithful servant during his terme according to his Indentury I give him a good Cow.

Lastly I doe make null and void all other wills made by me and I do publish and declare this to be my last will. And I doe apoint & constitute my loving soon John^s Lain to be sole executor to this my last will. In Testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand & seal the Twenty Eighth of September, 1696.

(sgd) Job^s Laine.

Signed & sealed in presence of

John Greenland, John Green, John Linds, Samuel Sprague.

Charlestown, Oct. 21, 1697. By the Hon^{ble} James Russell Esq.

Deacon John Greenleaf, Capt. John Green, Mr. John Lynde & Mr. Samuel Sprague p^{ersonally} appearing made oath that they wer p^{ersonally} present and saw ye subscriber Job Lane dece sign and seal & heard him publish and declare the above and within written to be his last Will and Testament and y^t when he so did he was of a disposing mind.

It is sworn to before me, Jurator Coram.

Ja. Russell.

—*Mid. Co. Wills.*

Sam^{ll} Phpps. Reg^r.

Inventory of the Estate of Mr. Job^s Lane of Malden in ye County of Middx. in his Maj^{ties} province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, yeoman, both Real and personall, who deceased the 24th of August Anno Domini 1697.

Imps. To a ffarme of above twelve hundred Acres more or less in ye bounds of ye Township of Billerica in said County, consisting of upland Swamps and medow lands with the fields, fences, orchard and buildings togather with about sixty acres of medow land in Billerica bounds about one mile to ye eastward of sd ffarme, altogather at £800,00,00.

To the homstedd of the s^d Lane in Malden afors^d viz one dwelling house, barne, corn mill, stream, dams and ponds with twenty two acres of salt medow below Lewis his bridge & one quarter part of his lotts in the commons of Malden at £225,00,00.

To two ffarmes or tenements in ye townshipp of Malden in the occupation of Tho^s Waite & John Mu^dg togather twenty acres of very good salt marsh in Rumly Marsh near the s^d ffarms and about eighty four acres of wood lotts in the Comons, in all two hundred and sixty one acres togather with the housings and said tenements and fenced in for ye most part with good stone wale, all disposed off in s^d Mr. Lane's last will,—

£913,00,00

weering apparill, books, Arms and Ammunition, plate,

goods in ye parlor, Kitchin, sellar, Carpenters tools,

goods in ye Middle, East, West chambers &c.

two horses and hors furniture, Hay, Horned-beasts &c.

1100,04,00

25,03,

(Errors Excepted) sume totall is,

£2038,07,00

Item, Ye lands in England given to Mr. John Lane in the will,
ye value not known. Sept. 22, 1697.

A Prized pr

James Converse
John Greenland.

more of the above said estate:

Money at home £12,10, money out £5 & £3, in full.....£20,10,00.

The Above estate indebted:

To Rates upon said estate,.....£1,01,05

Due to Job¹ Lane,.....07,06

To Funeral Charges, proveing ye will & prizing
ye estate..... 18,06,00

Debts,.....£19,14,11
Mid. Co. Wills.

The estates of Job¹ Lane in Malden and Billerica have continued largely with his descendants through the successive generations. Moreover, from near the dates 1662 to 1816, inclusive, or above one hundred and fifty years, the Job¹ Lane family received a yearly rental from the English estates—an instance wholly unparalleled in New England history.

1. JOB¹ LANE

1. JOB¹ LANE was born in England about 1620. He first appears at Sekonk, Mass., in 1643. Married, 1647, Sarah Boyce, in England. She died, "14th-19th, 3 mo., 1659,"* in Malden, Mass. They had four children.

He married, second, "2d, 7 mo., 1660," Anna or Hannah Reyner, born about 1632; she was a daughter of Rev. John and ———? (Boyce) Reyner of Gildersome, Yorkshire, England, and later pastor at Plymouth, Mass., 1635 to 1654.

Job¹ Lane died "August ye 23, 1697." His widow Anna or Hannah (Reyner) Lane died "April ye 30, 1704." They had five children.

Children of Job¹ Lane by his first wife, Sarah (Boyce) Lane:—

2. i. Sarah², was baptized 28, 3, 1648, in Dorchester, Mass. Mar-

* Malden tombstone.

ried, April 23, 1673, Samuel² Fitch, born March 6, 1645; he was a son of Zachariah¹ and Mary (—?) Fitch of Reading, now Wakefield, Mass. Sarah² (Lane) Fitch died Oct. 2, 1679. They had three children.

Samuel² Fitch married, second, July 26, 1681, Rebecca Merriam; and he died July 6, 1684. By his father's will he was to be assisted by his brothers Joseph² Fitch and Benjamin² Fitch "to build a house on his lot on Bear Hill, 27 by 18 feet with 12-foot posts, and to clapboard and board it, and break up his land or so much of it as can be done by the time he becomes 22 years of age."

Samuel² received by will from his father, dated June 27, 1684, real estate, and "on cow, the feather-bed that was his mother's (Sarah² Lane-Fitch) and the green rug and on pair of Holland sheets and three of the biggest peuter platters."

"If my brother Avery (Robert) [i.e., Robert Avery—Robert Avery was a *brother-in-law*, not a brother] doth take my son Samuel² [Fitch] and teach him to wright and the trade of a smith my will is that he [Samuel² Fitch] shall live with him [Robert Avery] till 20 years old."

Estate appraised, £235, 3 d. 11 s.

3. ii. Mary², was baptized, 1652, in Dorchester. Married, Sept. 21, 1673, William² Avery, baptized Oct. 27, 1647, in Barkham, England; he was a son of William⁴ and Margaret (—) Avery, who settled in Dedham, Mass., in 1650.

Mary² (Lane) Avery died Oct. 11, 1681, leaving four children.

William² Avery married, second, Aug. 29, 1682, Elizabeth White, who died Oct. 3, 1690, and left five children. William² Avery married, third, Aug. 25, 1698, Mehitable, widow of Samuel Worden and daughter of Gov. Thomas Hinckley. William² Avery died Dec. 15, 1708. His widow (Mehitable (Hinckley) Worden-Avery) died about 1726.

- + 4. iii. Elizabeth², was baptized, 1655-6, in Dorchester. *See forward*.
5. iv. Rebekah², was baptized, "4th, 5 mo., 1658,"* in Dorchester.

*Malden records say, "b. Feb. 1658; d. 2, mo. 58 years."

4. ELIZABETH² LANE

4. ELIZABETH² LANE*, was baptized 1655-6, in Dorchester, Mass. Married, April 3, 1677, Robert⁵ Avery, baptized Dec. 7, 1649, in Barkham, England; he was a son of William⁴ and Margaret (—?) Avery, who settled in Dedham, Mass., in 1650.

Robert⁵ Avery died Oct. 3, 1722, in Dedham. His widow Elizabeth² (Lane) Avery, died, same place, Oct. 21, 1746. They had six children. *See Avery Family.*

* Elizabeth² (Lane) Avery, died October 21, 1746, "leaving five children, thirty grandchildren, fifty-two great grandchildren, and two great, great grandchildren." See *Memorials of the Dead in Boston*, p. 303. (King's Chapel Burial ground.) Her tombstone in the Dedham cemetery reads as follows:

"Here lyes Buried ye Body
of Mrs. Elizabeth Avery
Widow of Ensign Robert
Avery. She died Oct.
ye 21st A. D. 1746
in ye 91st year of
her age."

SAMUEL PUTNAM¹² AVERY

Pedigree connection with Job¹ Lane who first appears in America at Sekonk, Mass., in 1643.

1. Great⁴-grandfather, Job¹ Lane, born in England about 1620, died in Billerica, Mass., Aug. 23, 1697. Great⁴-grandmother, Sarah (Boyce) Lane, born in England, —, died in Billerica, Mass., "14th-19th, 3 mo. 1659." *Tombstone.*
2. Great⁴-grandfather, Robert⁵ Avery, baptized in Barkham, England, Dec. 7, 1649, died in Dedham, Mass., Oct. 3, 1722. Great⁴-grandmother, Elizabeth³ (Lane) Avery, baptized in Dorchester, Mass., 1655-6, died in Dedham, Mass., Oct. 21, 1746. *See Avery Family.*
3. Great⁴-grandfather, John⁶ Avery, born in Dedham, Mass., Feb. 4, 1685-6, died in Truro, Mass., April 23, 1754. Great⁴-grandmother, Ruth³ (Little) Avery, born in Marshfield, Mass., Nov. 23, 1686, died in Truro, Mass., Oct. 1, 1732. *See Little Family.*
4. Great⁴-grandfather, Ephraim⁷ Avery, born in Truro, Mass., April 22, 1713; died in Brooklyn, Conn., Oct. 20, 1754. Great⁴-grandmother, Deborah⁶ (Lothrop) Avery, born in Norwich, Conn., Jan. 9, 1716-17, died in Highlands, N. Y., Oct. 4, 1777. *See Lothrop Family.*
5. Great²-grandfather, Ephraim⁸ Avery, born in Brooklyn, Conn., April 13, 1741, died in Rye, N. Y., Nov. 5, 1776. Great²-grandmother, Hannah (Platt) Avery, born in —, 1737, died in Rye, N. Y., May 13, 1776. *See Platt Family.*
6. Great-grandfather, John William⁹ Avery, born in Rye, N. Y., May 24, 1767; died in New York, —, 1799. Great-grandmother, Sarah⁸ (Fairchild) Avery, born in Stratford, Conn., Feb. 28, 1773, died in New York, May 6, 1837. *See Fairchild Family.*
7. Grandfather, Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery, born in New York, Jan. 1, 1797, died in New York, July 24, 1832. Grandmother, Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery, born in New York, April 24, 1804, died in Jersey City, N. J., June 26, 1888. *See Parke Family.*
8. Father, Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery, born in New York, March 17, 1822, died in New York, Aug. 11, 1904. Mother, Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, born in New York, Dec. 1, 1825, died in Hartford, Conn., April 29, 1911. *See Avery Family.*
9. Samuel Putnam¹² Avery, eldest son of Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery and Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 7, 1847. Died in Hartford, Conn., Sept. 25, 1920.

THE AVERY FAMILY IN ENGLAND

AUTHORITIES CITED

For the following record of the Avery Family in America, see:

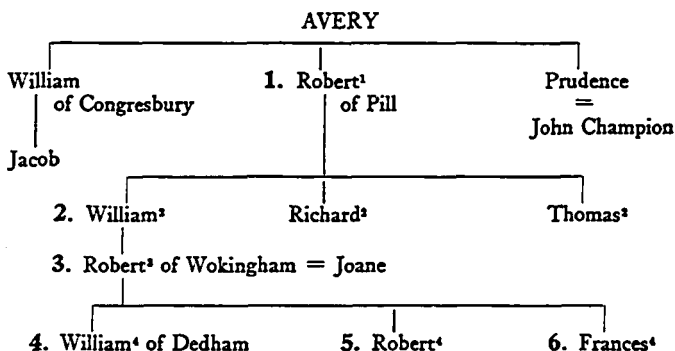
- Baird's *History of Rye, N. Y.*
 Bolton's *History of the County of Westchester, N. Y.*
Boston Record Commissioner's Reports, No. 9, B. M. D., Boston, 1630-1699, p. 48; Vol. 28, p. 236.
Brewster Genealogy.
 Bridgman's *King's Chapel Burial Ground*, Boston, 1853.
Burke's Armory (Edition 1844).
 Chandler's *Copy of Records in Pomfret, Conn.*
 Crozier's *Armoury of American Families*, 1904, p. 12.
 Cutler's *Life of Israel Putnam.*
 Davis' *Landmarks of Plymouth*, p. 173 (genealogies).
Dedham, Mass., Records, Vols. II, III.
Deeds of Land, Warrenville, Conn., Records.
 Dexter's *Yale Biographies*, Vol. 1745-1763, pp. 685-6.
 Drake's *Dictionary of American Biography.*
 Drake's *Founders of New England.*
Editorials and Resolutions in Memory of Samuel Putnam Avery, 1905.
Freeman Genealogy, p. 28.
 Freeman's *History of Cape Cod*, Vol. II, pp. 393, 558.
Genealogical Record of the Dedham, Massachusetts, Branch of the Avery Family in America, pp. 14-34, 78-80, 82, 107-141, 160-167, 172-181.
Genealogy of the Cornell Family.
General Register, Society of Colonial Wars, New York, 1899-1902.
Heraldic Journal, Vol. II, 1865, p. 184.
King's Chapel, Boston, Graveyard Inscriptions, pp. 29, 35.
King's Notable New Yorkers, 1896-99.
 Larned's *History of Windham County, Conn.*
Lebanon, Conn., Land Records.
Lion Gardiner and his Descendants, pp. 107, 116-18.
 Littlefield's *Early Boston Booksellers*, 1642-1711.
 Livingston's *Israel Putnam*, pp. 1-8, 411-14.
Lothrop Family Memoirs, pp. 58, 76.
 Mackenzie's *Colonial Families of the U. S. A.*, Vol. VI, 1917, pp. 30-34.
Mayflower Descendant, Vol. VI, pp. 204-5; Vol. IX, pp. 55-57, 75-6, 177, 244; Vol. X, p. 151.
New England Historic Genealogical Register, 1847.
New York Gazette and Mercury, May 27th, 1776.
New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, October, 1904.
New York Weekly Museum, 1793.
 Orcutt's *History of Stratford and Bridgeport, Conn.*, Vol. I, p. 339; Vol. II, pp. 1199, 1200.
Parke and Parks of Massachusetts, 1909.
Plymouth Colony Records.

Pope's *Pope Family*, pp. 301, 302.
Prominent Families of New York, 1898.
 Rich's *History of Truro, Cape Cod, Massachusetts*.
 Robert's *History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts*, 1637-1888.
 Savage's *Genealogical Dictionary of New England*, Vol. I, p. 83; Vol. III, pp. 52, 92.
 Selleck's *Norwalk, Conn.*, pp. 216-17, 337.
Some Account of the Parke Family, Westerly, R. I. Hist. Society, 1917, pp. 22-3.
 Thomas's *History of Printing*.
Valentine's Manual for the year 1793.
Vital Records of Salem, Massachusetts, Vol. I, p. 212.
 Worthington's *History of Dedham, Massachusetts*.
Year Book, Sons of the Revolution, New York, 1909.

THE AVERY FAMILY IN ENGLAND

While we date from Robert¹ Avery of Pill, England, as our earliest known ancestor, it may be proper to say that while we have not indisputable, yet we have strongly presumable, evidence that he was the great-grandfather of Dr. William⁴ Avery of Dedham, Mass., the immigrant ancestor. The presumption is, that the grandson Robert³ Avery mentioned in the will of Robert¹ Avery as the son of his son William² Avery was Robert³ Avery of Wokingham, the father of Dr. William⁴ Avery: and this presumption is given much weight by the mention of his sister, *Prudence (Avery) Champion*, and his brother, *William Avery of Congresburie**, and John Champion in the will.

The following is a copy of the supposed pedigree of Dr. William⁴ Avery of Dedham, Mass.



* The Parish of Congresburie is in Winterstoke Hundred, 6½ miles N. N. East of Axbridge, on the River "Yeo," and about 5 miles from its mouth. Acres 4280. Houses 247 in 1831. Population 1380 in 1841.

The "Yeo" rises near Compton Martin, and runs 13 miles N. N. West to Bristol Channel, 3 miles above Sand Point.

Frequent mention is made of the Avery name, in different parish records of baptisms in England, spelled variously Abrie, Averie, and Avery, and of marriage licenses, one, in particular noticeable from the fact that the groom, *Dudley Avery*, was a son of the Right Worshipful Samuel Avery, Alderman of London. But these records, though interesting to the genealogist, throw no light on the question of our own relationship to the parties named.

The following of ancient date is from the Deanery of Trigg Manor. By Mac Leon:—1466, August 22nd. *John Avery* was mentioned as living in the parish of St. Endellion, Cornwall. *Henry Avery* also held land in the same parish.

"After 1543, a *messuage* in Trewiggett, Cornwall, was in the possession of Richard Averye." ("A *messuage* was a dwelling house with adjacent buildings, and lands for the use of the household."—*Webster*.)

In 1603, a boundary of Tintaget, Cornwall, was signed by William Avery and others. Thomas Avery was mayor of the same place in 1605, William in 1746, Richard in 1801.

The name of Avery, according to memoranda from London, "*Notes and Queries*," is found at Bodmin, Cornwall, England, at an early date (and exists there at the present time), as early as 1310, in which year Thomas Avery was associated with others in a suit concerning 500 acres of land, at Halgrave, near Bodmin.

The name *Avery* is also found in the will of Agnes Arden (mother of Mary Shakespeare, and grandmother of William Shakespeare), widow of Robert Arden of Wilmscote parish of Arton (three miles from Stratford). In this document, dated 1584, she gives *Avery Fulwood* two sheep. John Fulwood married an aunt of William Shakespeare. *Malone's Shakespeare*.

There is also an Avery Lane in London and an Avery Street in Birmingham. There is a record in the history of Westminster Abbey showing that sometime in the fifteenth or sixteenth century Lady Elizabeth Avery of Devonshire was buried there.

In the year 1544, Michael Avery was mayor of Bodmin. The parish registers commence in 1559, and the name of Avery is among the first found therein.

There have also been found records of baptisms, marriages and deaths, as follows:—

1560—Johan, dau. of Thomas Avery, baptized May 26th.

1563—Thomas, son of Thomas Avery, baptized —.

1569—Walter Aveye and Origo Williams, married Sept. 6th.

1569—Michael Avery was buried Sept. 28th.

John Avery, of Bodmin, married Isoult Barry, of Wynscote, Devonshire, dau. of John Barry, who died 1538.

At Dowland, N. Devon, may be found the following inscriptions:

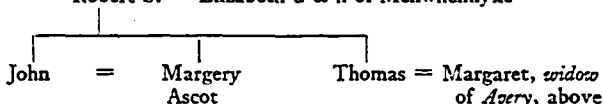
"Here lyeth the body of Margarett Stofford, the weif of Thomas Stofford Gent, mother of Robert Avery, who died the 3rd of Sept., anno dni, 1600.

"Here lyeth the bodie of Thomasine Avery, the first weif of Robert Avery, who died the xxvth Aprill, anno dm'ni, 1601.

"Here lyeth the bodie of Johane Avery, the second weif of Robert Avery, who died the xxiiith of Sept., anno dm'ni 1612."

PEDIGREE OF STOFFORD

Robert S. = Elizabeth d & h of Menwhennyke



Their arms are those of Dr. William⁴ Avery of Dedham, Mass.

The parish of Pill,—now Pylle, Somerset,—which was the residence of our earliest known ancestor, Robert¹ Avery, is $3\frac{1}{4}$ miles south of Shepton Mallet, in White Stone Hundred; acres, 1,570; houses, 35 in 1831; population, 216 in 1841. Pylle House (as per Black's Guide) is on the Bath & Bridport Railway. There is a town by the same name near the mouth of the Severn, on map of England, in Cotton's general atlas of 1862 (it is not the ancient Pill, however), $15\frac{1}{2}$ miles from Bath, and $23\frac{1}{4}$ miles from Shepton Mallet.

The name Pill seems to correspond to the Welsh *Powl*, an inlet or pool.

William⁴ Avery, our earliest ancestor in America, lived in Barkham, Berkshire, England.

We come now to trace the direct lines of descent from Robert¹ Avery, *yeoman*, down to the twelfth and latest generations of the Dedham branch of Averys in this country. "A *yeoman* or *husbandman* was one who tilled his own land in distinction from a peasant or farmer, who occupied the land of another." 1599 to 1655. *London Notes and Queries*.

1, ROBERT¹ AVERY died previous to October 14th, 1575, that being the date of the proving of his will. The will itself bears date July 27th, 1575, a copy of which, made from the original, is in the possession of Mr. W. T. Avery.

He had three sons, William², Richard², and Thomas². William² seems to have fallen under his father's displeasure for "having made a base marriage, and left his native parishe," but receives a share in the property, according to the terms of the will, "In token of forgiveness." Richard², the second son, is made sole executor, and his (i.e. Robert¹ Avery's) brother William¹ Avery, of Congresburie, and John Champion, his brother-in-law, are appointed overseers.

Will of Robert¹ Avery of Pill (now Pylle), Somerset, England, yeoman, found at Doctor's Commons, March, 1872.

In the name of Almighty God Amen, the 27th day of July in the year of our Lorde God 1575, I. Robert¹ Avery, yeoman of Pill, Co. Somerset, being sick in bodye, but hole in mynde and good in remembrance, do ordaine this my Testament and last Will, in manner and forme followinge:

Fyrst. I commande and bequeathe my Soule to Almytie God, my maker and Redeemer, and to all the Hollye companye in heaven, and my bodye to be buried as a Christian man.

Also I give and bequeathe to my sonne William² Avery, £5, my bowe and arrows, and my wynter gowne furred with fox, in token of my forgiveness for his having made a base marriage and left his native parishe.

Item. I give and bequeathe to my second sonne, Richard² Avery, all my farm implements, and the house wherein I now do dwell. Also I give and bequeathe to the said son Richard² Avery, one field and one medowe now in the occupation of John Austen, and I also bequeathe to him my goods, moveable and unmoveable which are in and about the house and premises, I now dwell.

Item. I give and bequeathe to my youngest sonne, Thomas² Avery,

£5, one cowe and one loade of hay, my silk doublet, two pair of hose and one brasse potte and cover.

Item. I doe give and bequethe to my Sister, Prudence [Avery] Champion, the somme of 10/4, and one milch cowe, two prs sheets, and my second best feather bedde, with all covering and appurtenances thereto.

Item. I give and bequethe to my grandsonne, Robert³ Avery, the sonne of my sonne William² Avery the somme of 6/8d.

Item. I give and bequethe unto William Sharpe, my oulde blue coate, and to my nephew, Jacob² Avery, my brother William's¹ sonne, my pen and one silver guilt flagon with cover.

Item. I give and bequethe to Abell, my servant, my bodye Lynen, and one shillinge.

Item. I give and bequethe the Resydewe of all my goods and Cattels unbequethed, unto my sonne, Richard² Avery. Also I ordeyne and make the sayde Richard² Avery, my sonne, to be my sole executor, and he to see my funeralles and debts payed. And to see this my last testament and will p.formed, as he will answer before Almightye God, at the generall day of judgment. Also I make overseer of this, my will, my brothers, William¹ Avery², of Congresburie, and John Champion, and I doe give for their paynes takynge Herein 2^o/eche. These beyng witnesses Robert Hibbert, Thos. Vyse with others. Proved by the executor Richard² Avery, Oct. 14th, 1575.

2. WILLIAM² AVERY, the oldest son of Robert¹ Avery had at least one son, Robert³ Avery. Whether there were other children the records do not say. This Robert³ Avery we suppose to have been the father of Dr. William⁴ Avery of Dedham, Mass.

* WILLIAM¹ AVERY of Congresburie (brother of Robert¹ Avery), had six sons: Thomas², William², Richard², Giles², Jacob² and John², and died 1585.

WILLIAM² had daughter Jane³ and son Joseph³.

JACOB² had seven children: Joseph³, Benjamin³, Christian³, Samuel³, Hester³, Benjamin³, Annah³, and died Feb. 1st, 1643.

JOHN² had four children: Sarah³, John³, William³ and Joane.

JOSEPH² (Jacob², William¹) had one son Joseph⁴, merchant of London.

SAMUEL² (Jacob², William¹) of Havidge and Enfield and Merchant of London, per London "*Notes and Queries*," May 20th, 1871, was sheriff of London, 1647, and was the Alderman Avery, who joined in the Act, May 30th, 1649, proclaiming the abolition of kingly government. He was commissioner, for sundry city ordinances about 1645, and the State Paper Office contains letters from him dated from Hamburg and addressed to Lord Digbye and Sir Thomas Rowe, Jan. 12th, 1643-4. He had one daughter, Katharine⁴, b. 1622, and one son Dudley⁴.

DUDLEY⁴ of Streately, Berkshire, Eng., had: Dudley⁵, Allen⁵, Samuel⁵, William⁵, Catharine⁵, Mirabella⁵, Christian⁵, Barsheba⁵.

"The parish of Streately is in Moreton Hundred, Berkshire, 5½ miles south by west of Wallingford, on the west bank of the Thames." *Gazetteer*, 1841.

3. ROBERT³ AVERY lived in Wokingham, Berkshire. By trade he was a blacksmith (which *was then* regarded as a profession as blacksmiths were skilled in the making of armor). His will, found in the Diocese of Doctor's Commons, bears date of March 30th, 1642. He married Joanne—? and had three children:

- + 4. i. William⁴, b. 1622. *See forward.*
- 5. ii. Robert⁴.
- 6. iii. Frances⁴.

We here insert the will of Robert³ Avery—a copy of the original being in possession of Mr. W. T. Avery.

WILL OF ROBERT³ AVERY OF WOKINGHAM*

In the name of God, Amen. The thirtieth day of March in the Eighteenth yere of the reign of our Sovereigne Lord Charles, by the grace of God of England, Scotland, and Ireland, Kings, defenders of the faith, Anno Domini one Thousand six Hundred forty-two. I, ROBERT³ AVERY, of Wokingham in the countie of Berks, blacksmith, being in perfect memory, praised be Almighty God, doe dis annul, recall and make void all former wills and Testam^{ts} weiche in writing or other wais. And doe make this my last will and Testament in manner and forme followinge. That is to say,

First. I doe bequeathe my soule unto God, my creator and redeemer. And my body to be decently buried at the discretion of my executors and overseers, and as touching my landes wherein I have estate, my will is as followeth: If it happens *Joane, my wif* survive and outlive me, my will is, I give and bequeath unto the said *Joane, my now wif*, all that messuage or Tenement in the w^h I now dwell, with the barns, Stables and houses, orchards, garden, w^h appurtenances and the close of avable or pastur thereunto belonging, and next adioninge (adjoining), known and called by the name of Lower dowles, allis little dowles, conteyning two akers more or less. And also another parcell of land, great dowles, allis upper dowles, lyinge and being in the p^{ish} of Wokingham and Countie of Berks, aforesaid, containing sixteen akers more or less, all of which said House and landes, I bought and purchased of Richard Windgate of Long Sutton Co. South to yeoman, during the terme of her naturall life, if she shall so long keep herselfe a widdow and unmarried, and after the death or marriage of the said *Joane, my now wif*, which of them shall first happen, my will is, and I doe give and bequeathe unto *William⁴ Avery, my eldest sonne*, all that my p^{cell} of land called great dowles, allis upper dowles aforesaid, to remain unto him and to his heirs forever. *Item*, that after

* The superior numbers inserted here after the christian names of individuals mentioned in this will are not in the original, but are here inserted to keep clear in the mind the generation of the person mentioned.

the death or marriage of the said *Joane, my now wiff* w^hever of them shall happen, I doe give and bequeathe unto *Robert^t Avery, my youngest son*, all that my messuage in the which I now dwell with the appurtenances and the close aforesaid thereunto belonging and next adiogning, to remain unto him and his heirs forever.

Item. I doe give and bequeathe unto *Frances^t Avery, my daughter*, the sum of twenty pounds to be paid unto her within two years, next after my decease which said some of £20 my will is, shall be paid by my executors, and to be raised out of that p^cell of land called upper dowles, allis great dowles. Item. I doe give and bequeathe (the some of five pounds)? unto *Roger Irelande the younger, eldest sonne of Roger Irelande of Hurst, weaver*, w^h said some of £5 my will is, shall be paid at his age of one and twenty years, by the said *Robert^t Avery, my youngest sonne*, heirs, executors and Administrators if the said Roger shall so long live.

Item. My will is that all the debts I now owe or shall ow, at the time of my decease shall be paid by my executors (and no pt throf be laid upon my son *Robert^t*, other than the five £ aforesaid) and that all such debts and funerell expenses shall be raised out of my stock of goods and chattels and the residue of all my goods and chattels, my debts and funerell charges first deducted and my legacies paid, I doe give and bequeathe unto *Joane my said wif*, and unto *William^t my sonne* equally to be divided whom I doe ordeine and make my executors ioyntly and coequally.

And I doe entreat and earnestly request my loving friends *Thomas Champion of Barkham** and *Andrew Avery of East Hampstead* both in Berks, overseers of this my last will and testam^t to whom I give and bequeath the some of five shillings apiece, to be paid to them w^h three months next after my decease. In witness whereof I have set my seal and subscribed unto both Sheetes in the p^tes of provided all waies that if *my eldest sonne William^t Avery* shall and doe well and truly pay or cause to be paid unto *my sonne Robert^t Avery*, the full some of Threescore pounds of lawful english money w^h three years next after the Decease of me and *Joane, my now wif*, by twenty pounds a year for three years yearly, that then it shall be lawful to and for *my said sonne William^t Avery* (with?) the message Tenemen^{ts} and their appurtenances w^h in the close or parcell thereunto belonging called lower Dowles, alis little dowles (being?) by these (pates?) given unto *my youngest sonne Robert^t* to enter, possess and enjoy. And I doe give and bequeathe the said p^mesis unto my said sonne (WM?) and his heirs forever, and any thing herein not w^hstanding.

Witness Giles Boulders Ann Boulders

Robt^t. Avery.

Proved 15th June 1644

(Signed)

* Parish of Barkham, Berks, is in Charlton Hundred, and 5 miles So. West of Wokingham. Acres 1415. Population 248 in 1841. Houses 36 in 1831. *Parl. Gazr.* 1841.

THE AVERY FAMILY
OF
DEDHAM, MASSACHUSETTS

WILLIAM¹ AVERY

1650

SETTLEMENT AND INCORPORATION OF THE TOWN OF DEDHAM

Fifteen years after the Pilgrims landed on Plymouth Rock, and five years after the landing of Gov. Winthrop and his colony in Boston, the General Court of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, on the 3rd day of September, 1635 (old style), the same day that Concord was incorporated, "ordered that there shall be a plantation settled about two myles above the falls of Charles Ryver in the north-east syde thereof to have ground lying to it on both sydes the ryver, both upland and meadow, to be layde out hereafter as the Court shall appoint." This was the beginning of the settlement, and it was the desire of the first settlers that the town should be called *Contentment*. The first two recorded meetings, Aug. 18th and 29th, 1636, were headed "Contentment." The name was afterwards erased by a line drawn across it, and the name "Dedham" written over. It has been usually understood in neighboring towns that the name was chosen in memory of the town by the same name in England, but we find no allusion to this fact in records which we have seen.

At any rate, it is evident that these settlers proposed to have their new town a model for good order and peace. It seems also that they made a point in regard to the practice of religion, by the following covenant, which all who wished to settle there were required to sign.

THE TOWN COVENANT

1. We, whose names ar. here vnto subscribed, doe, in the feare and Reverence of our Almightye God, mutually: and severally p'mise amongst our selves and each to other to p'fesse and practice one trueth according to that most p'rfect rule, the foundation where of is Everlasting Love;

2. That we shall by all means Laboure and keepe of from us all such as ar contrary minded. And receave only such vnto vs as be such as may be p'bably of one harte, with vs as that we either knowe or may well and truely informed to walke in a peaceable conversation with all meekeness of spirit for the edification of each other in the knowledge and faith of the Lord Jesus; and the mutual encouragem't vnto all Temporall comforts in all things; seeking the good of each other out of all which may be derived true Peace.
3. That if at any time difference shall arise between p'ties of our said Towne, that then such p'tie and p'ties shall p'sently Referre all such difference vnto som one, 2 or 3, others of our said Societie to be fully accorded and determined without any further delay if it possibly may bee:
4. That every man that now or at any time heere after shall have Lots in our said Town, shall pay his share in all such rates of money, and charges as shall be imposed vpon him Rateably in p'portion with other men. As also become freely subject vnto all such orders and constitutions as shall be necessariely had or made, now or at any time heere after from this day fore warde, as well as for Loveing and comfortable Societie, in our said Towne, as also for the p'perous and thriving Condition of our said fellowshipe, expecially respecting the feare of God in which we desire to begine and continue what so ever shall by his Loveing favoure take in hand.
5. And for the better manifestation of our true resolution heere in, every man so receaved; to subscribe here vnto his name there by obliging both himself and his successors after him for ever as we have done.

This Covenant was "with one accord agreed upon at the first recorded Meeting of the Dedham Proprietors, August 16th, 1636. It is in the handwriting of Edward Alleyn & was originally signed by 19 persons present at the meeting" and by 106 "those others after the meeting was dissolved." *Dedham Historical Records*, Vol. II, p. 153.

Edward Alleyn, who had charge of the Records for two years was "deceased the 8 of ye 7 mo, 1642." There is no record of his birth. *Dedham Historical Records*, Vol. I, p. 29.

In 1636 a burial place was set apart and for nearly a century was the only one in town. Here are the graves of many of the early ministers and founders of Dedham, and a walk through the grounds shows many stones of great historical interest, many of which bear the name of Avery.

The original limits of the town comprised the present towns

of Dedham, Medfield, Walpole, Wrentham, Needham, Wellesley, Dover, Norwood, Norfolk, Franklin, most of Bellingham, and parts of Natick, Hyde Park, and West Roxbury; for a short time the territory forming Millis formed a part of Dedham under a subsequent grant. A large part of the settlers went from Watertown to the new town, and in 1638 thirty-eight families were settled there.

The men who thus early formed the town of Dedham were most, if not all, men who had fled from England to find a land where they could enjoy religious rights. The first meeting for public worship was held under one of several great trees which stood near what is now the center of Dedham Village, but in 1638 measures were taken to build a meeting-house.

The first schoolhouse was built of logs in 1648, ten years after the meeting-house was erected. Its cost was about £12, and the salary of the schoolmaster who first taught there was £20 per annum.

An almshouse was not found necessary till the year 1773, at which time the town erected one "on the westerly part of the training ground."

THE AVERY HOMESTEAD AND OAK

The house was probably built in Dedham, Mass., as early as 1651 by William⁴ Avery, who was "admitted Townesman" on January 1st, 1650-1. The buildings were taken down in 1885.

*The ancient white oak tree, undoubtedly much older than the settlement of the town, is still standing and belongs to the Dedham Historical Society. It measures, 1918, five feet from the ground, a few inches over sixteen feet in circumference, while a line drawn around the base on the ground measures twenty-seven feet six inches, and the longest branch extends over the ground fifty feet from the trunk.

This tree was fitly selected as the centerpiece of the town seal

* See *Historic Trees of Massachusetts*, by James R. Simmons, pp. 47-50.

and as "the symbol of age & strength as well as of present life & vigor."

"Now that the Washington elm has been officially declared dead, the question arises:

"What and where is the most famous tree now growing in New England?"

"The Washington Elm succeeded to its title of 'most famous' when the Great Elm on Boston Common was destroyed in a gale in 1876. This was one of the only three trees standing on the Common when the Puritans landed, and upon it were hanged the victims of Boston's witchcraft mania."

So far as my memory serves me at this moment, as good a claim as any to the title of "most famous tree" may now be put forth in behalf of the *Avery Oak*, only a short distance from the old Fairbanks house in Dedham.

Edward M. Bacon, the historian, has written concerning this oak:

"It is a great tree, older than the town, with a circumference, five feet from the ground, of 16 feet. Its owner at the time is said to have refused \$70 for it from the builders of the *Constitution*, who desired it for timber for 'Old Ironsides.'

"Can any of the *Post's* readers name a more distinguished tree than this, still growing in New England?"—*Boston Post*, August 18th, 1923.

A RARE PAINTING

RELIC OF 1650 COMES TO THE DEDHAM HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Through the generosity and interest of Samuel Putnam¹² Avery of Hartford, Conn., the Dedham Historical Society has just come into the possession of the oil painting of the Coat of Arms of the Avery family, which was brought from England by William Avery when he came to this country in 1650. It remained in the old Avery house until about 1800, when it was taken to Conway, Massachusetts, and has since descended to various heirs until it was recently secured by Mr. Avery, who



AVERY ARMS

has now presented it to the Historical Society. The painting is about 18 x 18 inches and in very good condition considering its age. The Coat of Arms is "*Gules, a chevron between three bezants or. Crest, two lions jamps, or, supporting bezant.*" There have been only nine owners of the canvas since it was brought over, 269 years ago. They were:

1. William⁴ Avery came from England, 1650, settled in Dedham, Mass., and brought with him the Avery Coat of Arms. He was born 1622, and died March 18th, 1686. The painting then passed to the ownership of the following persons:
2. William⁵ Avery, eldest son, baptized in England, October 12th, 1647, died December 15th, 1708.
3. William⁶ Avery, born March 31st, 1678, died May 13th, 1750.
4. William⁷ Avery, only son of William⁶ Avery, born August 30th, 1716, died August 5th, 1796. This Coat of Arms is mentioned in the inventory of his estate. He was the great-grandson of William⁴ Avery.
5. The third daughter and sixth child of William⁷ Avery was Mrs. Grace⁸ (Avery) Howland, born August 17th, 1755, died February 12th, 1841. She inherited the Avery Coat of Arms from her father.
6. In 1853 it was given to Mrs. Jerusha⁹ (Avery) Bingham, born September 13th, 1780, died December 1st, 1874. She was the granddaughter of William⁷ Avery.
7. Then Mrs. Lucy Avery¹⁰ (Bingham) King inherited it from her mother; she was born May 21st, 1822, died July 7th, 1888.
8. The next owner, Mrs. Grace Avery¹¹ (King) Steele, born April 21st, 1847, transferred the Coat of Arms to
9. Samuel Putnam¹² Avery, of Hartford, Conn., who was born October 7th, 1847; and he presented it in January, 1919, to the Dedham Historical Society, in which town it first appeared in 1650. *The Dedham Transcript*, February 8th, 1919.

1. WILLIAM⁴ AVERY

We now take up the record of our earliest ancestor in America, who crossed the Atlantic in 1650, and cast in his lot with the settlers of the town of Dedham, Mass., bringing with him his

wife, Margaret*, and three children, from the parish of Barkham, County of Berkshire, England. Two sons and two daughters were born after 1650, in Dedham.

By the Dedham church records, we find that "William⁴ Avery & his wife Margaret were admitted into the church 16th, 12th mo. (Feb.) 1650." This, without doubt, marked an event that occurred quite near the date of their settlement. In the same year the town records make the following statement:

"It was granted vnto Wm⁴ Avery, to set his shoppe in the highway in the east street, the west side of his shoppe to extend in front line of his house, next his house, provided that he lays down so much land on the east side of the said ways—as the same is straightened by this said shopp, at such time as the towne shall require the same, always provided that whensoever the said shopp shall be no longer used for a Smythe's shopp, by the said William⁴ at any time hereafter then it shall be removed out of the highway, if the town shall require the same." (Ye 15th of ye 1 mo. 1650).

In the year 1669 we find William⁴ Avery designated in the records as Sergt. William⁴ Avery, and with others, sent as Deputy to the General Court.

He was one of the original proprietors, who, in 1670, took possession of 8000 acres of land at Deerfield (then called *Pocumtuck*), granted to the town of Dedham in lieu of 2000 acres

* The Will of WILLIAM ALLRIGHT the elder of Arberfeild in the County of Berks, yeoman, 18 Mar. 1666. Aged and weak of body. To the poor at the parish of Arberfeild 10s. To wife Jone £70, which is owing to me upon the bond of Thomas Moore of Whitley in the said county, yeoman. My wife shall dwell with my executor rent free for six months after my decease in my said dwelling house. If my wife depart this life before she receive the £70, it is to be divided among my two children William Allright and Thomas Allright, and Alice Wright, my wife's sister. "I give vnto my eldest Daughter *Margarett Avery in new England* Twenty shillings of Lawfull money if ever it be Demanded, to be paid vnto her by my Executor." To my cousin James Brant a suit. To my youngest son Thomas Allright £140. To Mary Ellis, Margarett Ellis, and William Ellis, three of the children of my son-in-law Edward Ellis, £10 each at age of twenty-one years. All residue of estate to my son William Allright, he to be sole executor. My brother James Allright and my friend Samuel¹ Norris to be overseers. [Signed] The marke of William Allright. Witnesses: John Mileham, Mathew Mileham, and William Biddle. Proved 21 May 1667 by the Oath of William Allright, son and executor named in the will.

[Margaret Allright, daughter of the testator, must have been the wife of William Avery who settled in Dedham, Mass., about 1650. It has been assumed that William⁴ Avery of Dedham was identical with William⁴ Avery, son of Robert² Avery of Barkham, Berks. As Barkham is only about two miles from Arborfield, this assumption of identity now seems a certainty.] *New England Historic Genealogical Register*, Oct. 1909, p. 361.

taken from the town by the General Court for the Indians at Natick.

In 1675 he was, with several prominent men, appointed by the court to examine Indians who were suspected of some base designs against the English, and in connection with this entry in the town book of records, he is first given the title of Dr.

"Dr. William⁴ Avery was the earliest educated physician, who is known to have taken up his residence in Dedham. He appears to have been well educated, a man of benevolence, and especially a patron of learning, etc." It is known that in his life he made liberal donations to various public charities, among which was one to the college at Cambridge.

That he did not forget the town which had been the place of his many years' residence, is seen by the following:

"Capt. Daniel Fisher and Ensign Fuller report that Dr. William⁴ Avery, now (1680) of Boston, but formerly of the Dedham church, out of entire love of his Church and Town, freely gives into their hands, sixty pounds, for a Latin school, to be ordered by the Selectmen and elders." *Worthington's History of Dedham*, p. 36.

Twenty-eight years after their arrival and settlement in America, having lived all this time in Dedham, Margaret, wife of Dr. William⁴ Avery died. The date of her death, per Dedham Records, was Sept. 28th, 1678, and soon after he removed to Boston, where he became a bookseller, according to the "*History of Printing*," by Thomas, Vol. II, p. 411, who says, "William⁴ Avery was Bookseller, located near the Blue Anchor,* in 1679."

Dr. William⁴ Avery married, in 1679, for his second wife, Mrs. Maria or Mary (Woodmansey) Tappin,† daughter of

* The *Blue Anchor* stood near the spot where the Transcript Building stood on Washington Street, now occupied by the Globe newspaper office. See "*Memorial History of Boston*," 1880, Vol. I, p. 510.

† "His Wife (Margaret) died September 28th, 1678, & in 1679 he married Mrs. Maria Tappin, widow of John Tappin, died Sept. 14, 1678, married 20. 6 mo. 1654, of Boston, to which place he removed, & took charge of the book shop recently conducted by Joseph Tappin, her son, to which he added an apothecary's department, which is said to have been the first ever established in New England. In 1679 he published a book the title of which reads: 'The Necessity of pouring out the spirit from on High, etc.' Boston: Printed by John Foster, for William Avery near the sign of the Blew Anchor, 1679." *Littlefield's Early Boston Booksellers*, 1642-1711, pp. 93-180.

Mr. Robert Woodmansey and widow of John Tappin of Boston; he lived only about six years afterward, dying on the 18th March, 1686, aged about 65 years. His wife Maria died May 21st, 1707, aged 78. His tombstone stands in King's Chapel burial ground, Boston, near and facing the middle of the railing on Tremont Street. On it is also inscribed the name of his widow, Maria. It is likely that this stone does not stand where it was originally placed, as a number of tombstones were taken up and set in a row by some persons,—a barbarism that should never have been sanctioned.

Of the three children born to William⁴ Avery in Barkham, Berkshire County, England, we make special mention, as there is a certified copy of the certificates of their baptisms signed by the rector of the parish, as follows:

"1645. Mary^s Avery, the daughter of Margaret and William⁴ Avery, was baptized the 19th of December. 1647. William^s the sonne of William⁴ and Margaret Avery, was baptized the seven and twentieth day of October.

1649. Robert^s Avery, ye sonne of William⁴ and Margaret Avery, baptized the viith of December.

I, Arthur Roberts, rector of Barkham, certify the above to be a true copy of the Baptism Register of the said parish. Extracted this 15th day of March in the year of our Lord, 1880. By me.

(Signed) ARTHUR ROBERTS."

Children of William⁴ Avery by his first wife, Margaret Allright:—

2. i. Mary^s, was born in Barkham, England, and baptized there, Dec. 19, 1645. Married, Nov. 5, 1666, James^s Tisdale*, born —, 1644, of Taunton, Mass. She died Sept. 9, 1713. He died Jan. 15, 1715. They had one child.
3. ii. William^s, was born in Barkham, and baptized there Oct. 27, 1647. Married first, Sept. 21, 1673, Mary Lane, born —, 1652; she was the eldest daughter of Job¹ and Sarah (Boyce) Lane, of Malden, Mass., and moved to Middleboro, Mass., the part now known as Lakeville. Mary (Lane) Avery died Oct. 11, 1681, leaving four children.†

William^s Avery married, second, Aug. 29, 1682, Elizabeth

* "John¹ Tisdale, of Duxbury, Mass., 1637: father of James^s, had land at Hound's ditch, and Namasakeeset, which he sold to William Brett, 1657: removed to Taunton, where he was selectman and died there June 27, 1675." Winsor's *Hist. of Duxbury*, p. 326.

† See *Lane Family*.

White, who had five children, and died Oct. 3, 1690.

William^s Avery married, third, Oct. 13, 1698, Mehitable (Hinckley) Worden, born March 24, 1659; she was the widow of Samuel Worden, and the daughter of Gov. Thomas and Mary (Richards) Hinckley^s, of Plymouth, Mass.

William^s Avery died Dec. 15, 1708, in Dedham. His third wife and widow died same place, about 1726.

+ 4. iii. Robert^s, was born in Barkham, England and baptized there, Dec. 7, 1649. *See forward.*

5. iv. Jonathan^s, was born in Dedham, Mass., May 26, 1653. Married, July 22, 1679, Sybil Sparhawk, born "about 1655"; she was a daughter of Nathaniel^s and Patience (Newman) Sparhawk[†], of Cambridge, Mass.

Jonathan^s died Sept. 14, 1690, in Dedham, "inventory taken May 13, 1691," leaving four children. His widow Sybil (Sparhawk) Avery married, second, Rev. Michael Wigglesworth,[‡] born Oct. 18, 1631 (Harvard, 1651), died "June ye 10, 1705," in Malden, Mass., where a street perpetuates his memory. His widow died Aug. 6, 1708.

§Nathaniel^s Sparhawk and his wife Mary, were here (Cambridge), as early as 1636. — In 1639 he was "permitted to draw wine and strong water for Cambridge." In 1642, he appears to have owned five houses and about five hundred acres of land. His wife died Jan. 25, 1643-4. He married, second, Katharine —; he died June 28, 1647. After his death, about a thousand acres were sold for his estate. His widow died July 5, 1647.

14, 9, 1656. "Esther Sparhawk, daughter of Nathaniel Sparhawk, to Thomas Hammond, for £40, three hundred and thirty acres of land, granted by the town of Cambridge to her father." Jackson's *History of Newton*, p. 26.

Nathaniel^s married, second, Oct. 3, 1649, Patience, daughter of Rev. Samuel Newman, of Rehoboth. Nathaniel^s was selectman seven years between 1677 and 1686; a Deacon of the Church and died soon after, Dec. 29, 1686: the date of his will.*†

Mr. W. R. Deane says: "There was a large Parchment Deed signed by Thomas Graves of Charlestown, Physician, and Sybil^s (Avery) Graves, his wife, and Dorothy^s Avery, Spinster, the only two daughters of Jonathan^s Avery, of Dedham, deceased, who sell to Wm. Avery of Dedham, blacksmith, for

* "In 1681, June 7th, Thomas Hinckley, Esq., was chosen governor and by annual election, continued to 1686." *New England Memorial*, p. 227.

† Paige's *History of Cambridge, Mass.*, pp. 656-7.

‡ *N. E. Hist. Gen. Register*, Vol. XVIII.

§ Paige's *History of Cambridge*, p. 657.

£250, house and land in Dedham, 4th April, 1710.

Witnesses.

Signed.

Eleazer ———

Thos. Graves

William Bullard

Sybil^s [Avery] Graves

Robert Ward

Dorothy^s Avery."

Recorded, Suffolk, 1765, book 106 (or 156), page 256.

6. v. Rachel^s, was born in Dedham, Sept. 20, 1657. Married, May 22, 1677, William² Sumner, born in Boston, Mass., Feb. 9, 1656; he was a son of William¹ (born in Bicester, England) and Elizabeth (Clement) Sumner, of Dorchester, Mass.

Rachel^s died soon, before Oct. 15, 1683, as she is not mentioned in her father's will.

William² Sumner married, second, Hannah —? and moved to Middletown, Conn., about 1687; there he was Lieutenant, Deacon, and Deputy to the General Court in 1701-2-3. He died at Middletown, July 20, 1703. His second wife died —. They had six children.

7. vi. Hannah^s, was born in Dedham, Sept. 27, 1660. Married, May 22, 1677 (the same day that her sister Rachel^s Avery married William² Sumner), Benjamin Dyer, of Boston, freeman 1675. Hannah^s (Avery) Dyer died in Dedham, Sept. 15, 1678. Benjamin Dyer died March 15, 1690.
8. vii. Ebenezer^s, was born in Dedham, Nov. 24, 1663. Died before Oct. 15, 1683, as he is not mentioned in his father's will.

DEED OF WILLIAM⁴ AVERY

March 16th, 1681-2

Gift to His Eldest Son, William^s Avery

Know all men by these p'sents, that I, William⁴ Avery (Phistion & chirurgion) Resident in Boston, in the county of Suffolke, in the Massachusetts Collony in New England, upon good Considerations upon account of portion. Do hereby and herewith freely give, grant & set out to my beloved Eldest son William^s Avery (blacksmith) resident in Dedham, in ye County of Suffolke aforesaid—Do for me, my Heyers, & Successers, fully freely & absolutely give unto my sayd son William^s Avery & to his Heyers, Executo^{rs}, Administrato^{rs}, and Assigns forever, those two house lotts in Dedham, which was granted by the sayd towne to Francis Austin & William Bearstoe, as they lye adjoyneing together in that part of Dedham Towne called East Street, as the sayd lotte lyeth by & an bounded & abutteth upon the Great Highway or Street towards the west & upon the land of John Fayerbanke sen^r. & ye land of Jonathan ffayerbanks towards the South & east and upon the land that I purchased of

* Sumner Genealogy, p. 4.

Mr. Dwight towards the East, & upon the land of my son Jonathan^s Avery towards the North, and also all the houses, buildings, orchards & improvements upon the sayd Land. More, one parcell of woodland, the quantity being more or less, the same I bought of Mr. Timothy Dwight as it lyeth by & abutteth upon the aforesayd Land, and upon the lot or land of Jonathan^s Avery towards the west & upon the land of Thomas Herring towards the North, & upon the Mill Creek towards the east and abutteth upon the land of Jonathan ffayerbank towards the South—More, one parcell of meadow and upland as it lyeth in east street aforesayd, near the house lot of land aforesayd, as it lyeth by & is bounded and abutteth upon the aforesayd Highway or street towards the east, right agaynst the aforesay'd land & abutting upon the land of John ffayerbanks towards the south & upon the little River towards the west and upon the meadow & upland of Jonathan Avery towards the North according to the ditch & fence as it is now devided & fenced—More, nine acres of upland more or less as it lyeth together in Dedham aforesayd near unto south meadow a part thereof I purchased of Thomas Battelle, the remaynder thereof was granted unto me by the Town of Dedham, the true bounds & abutments of the whole parcel according as it is described in the book of Grants or Records of the Town of Dedham—More, eight acres of meadow, more or less, as it lyeth in Dedham aforesayd in that meadow called Rock meadow, as it lyeth by & is bounded and abutteth upon the meadow that was Deacon Henry Chickery^{**} towards the North & upon Brook or small river that runeth through rock meadow towards the east & South east, and abutteth upon the wast upland one all other parts.

More, one parcell or lott of Lands in Dedham aforesayd as it do Lye in that Devision of land near Meadfield bound line the quantity being two hundred and fifty acres, more or less, the whole lot as it was granted by the Towne of Dedham to the Rights of Ens. Francis Chickering, the bounds and abutments Being described in the Booke of the Towne of Dedham's Records.

More. Six acres of seader Swamp, be it more or less the whole lot as it lyeth in Dedham aforesayd, near or adjoineing to the great Pond as it is bounded & abutteth upon the said pond towards the North, upon Turkey Island towards the west and upon the swamp that did belong to Henery Phillips and upon the wigwam plain, one all other parts. More, the whole & full Rights of nine Cow Commons and three Sheep Commons in all sorts of Lands in all Devissions of Lands yet at any time hereafter to be layed out in the whole bounds of the Towne of Dedham aforesayd whatsoever. More, the moyetie or half part of my lot or parcell of meadow that I bought of Cornelius ffisher as it lyeth in Fowle Meadow one the Northerly side of the River, being the first meadow streame towards the west that is yet layd out one the Northerly side of the sayd River. More, all my sayd Cow Common Rights in all Devissions of Lands yet layd out or at any time hereafter to be layd out in all the Township & bounds in the Towne of Wrentham—More, Twenty & six acres of land be it more or

less as it Lyeth in the Thousand Acres near Dedham in the bounds of Rocksbery in the seaventh hundred undevided, Lyeing with the widdow Heath, the land formerly Arthur Garys, Robert Seaver, & Robert Peper, being the Land I purchased of Thomas ffoster, as by a legall Deed thereof may more full apeare. All the aforesayd Lotm^{ts} and parcell of uplands, meadows, swamp and Common Rights aforesayd as they are described aforesayd, I, the sayd William^s Avery do avouch and declare to be at the day of the date hereof of my owne proper estate, & in my owne power all the pr.^{ts} mises Lawfully to dispose & give. And do hereby further warrant all ye aforescribed pr.^{ts} mises together with all the buildings, orchards, fences, wood Timber, stone, grass, feed proffits pr.^{ts} velidges, improvements, & Comodities thereupon, therein, or thereunto any way appertayning, or that may at any time hereafter be procured & attained, from all the p.^{ts} mesis or any part, or parcell thereof whatsoever TO HAVE & TO HOLD to him, my sayd son William^s Avery as a good inheritance, in fee Simple to him, His Heyers, executo.^{rs} Administrato^{rs} & Assignes in peaceable Possession forever, free, Acquitt & discharged of & from all & all manner of Debts, Mortgages, Leases, Entayles. Dowrys, Titles of Dowry & all other Locall Mollestations & encumbrances whatsoever, from, by, or under us or any of us, we the sayd William^s or my Heyers or successors. And I do herewith Render & give Seizur & Lawful Possession of all the above described p.^{ts} mises & do further promis to do any further Act, or Acts things or things do, or may any way tend to the more full confirmation & Loyall assurance of all the above demised p.^{ts} mises whensoever I am Reasonably requested thereunto. In Witnes to & for full Confirmation of all the above demised p.^{ts} mises, I the Sayd William^s Avery, Sen^r. have hereunto set my hand & afixed my seale in y^e year one Thousand six hundred Eighty one, the 16th of March.

Read, Signed,

Sealed & Delivered

in P.^{ts} sence of

Daniell ffisher

WILLI^s AVERY

[SEAL]

Jn^o Woodmansey

Mr. William^s Avery acknowledged this Instrume. th to be his Act and Deed, this 16th March 1681-2.

Mrs. Mary—or Maria (Woodmansey) Tappin-Avery, wife of William^s Avery did at the same time resigne & disclaim all her right & Title in the p.^{ts} mises.

before SAM^l NORWELL ASSIST. (Sign^d).

WILL OF WILLIAM^s AVERY OF DEDHAM, MASS.

In Probate Office, Boston, Mass., dated 15th October, 1683.

I, WILLIAM^s AVERY, resident of Boston, in the county of Suffolk, of ye Massachusetts Colony in New England, practitioner in physick and aged about 61 years, being through God's goodness of sound judgment and memory, yet weak in body and expecting my great change quickly, do

constitute and ordain this my last Will and Testament as followeth, viz:

Imprim. That after my decease my body shall be with decent buryal interred, at ye discretion of my executors and that all my just debts and funerall expenses shall duly and Seasonably paid.

Item. I give unto my dear and loving *Wife Mary*, the summe of one hundred pounds of currant mony of New England as I promised upon marriage with her and which is now in her hand. Also I do give unto my said Wife during her life the use of ye part of my housing and lands in Dedham in ye county aforesaid, which are served in *my son Jonathan's* deed, and the use of halfe my Island meadow, reserved in *my son Robert's* deed, together with the use of a bed and furniture.

Item. I do give and bequeathe to my daughter *Mary*^s [*Avery*] *Tisdale*, one hundred pounds in mony or goods at mony price to be paid within three years after my decease, and my will is y^t what she hath already received shall be reckoned as part of it.

It. I give and bequeath to my *two sons-in-law*, *William Sumner* and *Benjamin Dyer*, twenty pounds apiece, accounting that which each of them hath received already as a part of this legacy to them. And further my will is, that in case my share in certain mines shall prove profitable, then yy shall have twenty pounds apiece more paid them by my Executors at and upon ye advice of my overseers yy judging them to be so profitable as y^t there is reason for the same.

It. My Will is y^t *my son Jonathan*^s shall have my two Stills, all my Physick books and instruments, he allowing twenty pounds to my Executors for ye same.

It. Concerning my part in several mines my Will is, that after all necessary charges laid out or to be laid out upon them be equally satisfied, then the profit or income of them, while my wife lives, shall be divided to her and to my four children, *William*^s, *Robert*^s and *Jonathan*^s *Avery* and *Mary*^s [*Avery*] *Tisdale*, and after my wife's decease shall be divided among my said children; and my Will is, that in all these divisions *my son William*^s shall have a double share and the rest each of them, a single share or equal share. Further, my Will is, that a third part of all the profit y^t shall arise to any and all my children from the said mines shall be improved for publick and charitable uses according to their own discretion. And my Will is, that it shall remain with them from time to time, their heirs or successors, that all necessary charges deducted, a third part of ye profit of ye mine aforesaid shall be for publick and charitable use. *It.* I do nominate and appoint *my three sons*, *William*^s, *Robert*^s and *Jonathan*^s, Executors of this my last Will and Testament. And do will y^t what I have already given them, by deeds or otherwise shall be reckoned as their several portions. Only my Will is y^t in case there shall be any estate remaining after all debts and legacies above bequeathed be paid, then my son *William*^s shall have thirty pounds mor to make him up a double share. And, if afterward there be anything remaining, it shall be equally divided among my four children. Finally, I do nominate and request my worthy friends Mr.

John Wilson of Medfield and Mr. William Adams of Dedham, to be my overseers to give advice and their help to my Executors as yy shall need in reference to this my last Will and I do appoint, y^e shall have each of them fourty shillings paid them by my executors within three months after my decease, besides honest satisfaction for any necessary labor may be expended by them hereabout.

And in testimony of my ordaining and constituting this my last Will and Testament. I have hereunto set my hand and seal this fifteenth day of October, in ye year of our Lord, one thousand six hundred and eighty three.

Signed and sealed
in presence of us

Samuel lane

Samuel Fearrin.

William⁴ Avery

[SEAL]

Sealed Published and confirmed by Mr. William⁴ Avery to be his last Will and Testament the 13th of March 1686-7 in the presence of us

WILLIAM HABERFILD,
JOHN HIGGS,
JAMES WOODMANSEY

THE AVERY SEAL

11/16 x 9/16, with handle & ring 1 inch high

In the will of William⁴ Avery it says, "I have hereunto set my hand & seal this fifteenth day of October, in ye year of our Lord one thousand six hundred & eighty three." At a later day three witnesses, William Haberfild, John Higgs, and James Woodmansey, wrote upon the will, "Sealed Published & confirmed by Mr. William⁴ Avery to be his last Will & Testament the 13th of March 1686-7 in the presence of us." William⁴ Avery died three days later, March 18th. *Avery Genealogy*, p. 34.

Up to a few years ago this will, filed in the Probate Office, Boston, Mass., bore a wax impression of the seal with the Avery Coat of Arms, but it was cut out by some vandal.

"The seal on the will of Joseph Dummer of Dorchester in 1721 is evidently that of one of the witnesses, William⁶ Avery. This is proved not only by the agreement of the arms with the name, but by the fact that the family possesses an old painting of this



AVERY SEAL

Coat, which is mentioned in an inventory prior to 1750." Whitmore's *Heraldic Journal*, Vol. II, p. 184.

This seal was also used as affixed to the signature of this same William⁶ Avery in a deed from James Whiting to him dated July 10th, 1724, and a cut of the seal may be seen in the *Heraldic Journal*, Vol. II, p. 184.

The will of John⁸ Avery, dated Truro, January 18th, 1744, bears an impression of the same seal. *Avery Genealogy*, pp. 134-147.

The seal is mentioned in the will of William⁷ Avery, December 1st, 1791, who gives to his son Joseph⁸ his "Seal of a watch which hath the arms of the family engraved upon it." *Avery Genealogy*, p. 41.

The original seal, of silver, was presented to the Dedham Historical Society in 1906, by Miss Salome Elizabeth White of Brooklyn, N. Y. It was formerly the property of her great-grandfather, the Rev. Joseph⁸ Avery of Holden, Mass., born October 14th, 1751, died March 5th, 1824, after nearly fifty years' pastorate. *Avery Genealogy*, pp. 62-9.

The Historical Society of Dedham has many relics of the Avery family. Among them is an Ensign's flag, of silk, probably belonging to Ensign Robert⁸ Avery, also an ancient anvil, documents, and books, which have belonged to the family for years.

In 1919 Mr. Edward Davis Conant, of Newton, Mass., presented the Malacca cane with an ivory head, inlaid with silver, which formerly belonged to William⁴ Avery.

4. ROBERT⁵ AVERY

4. ROBERT⁵ AVERY, second son of William⁴ and Margaret (Allright) Avery, was baptized in Barkham, Berkshire County, England, December 7, 1649, brought to America by his parents and settled in the town of Dedham, Mass., in 1650. Married, April 13, 1676, Elizabeth² Lane, baptized in Dorchester, Mass., 1655-6; she was a daughter of Job¹ and Sarah (Boyce) Lane, of Malden, Mass. Robert⁵ Avery died October 3, 1722, in Ded-

ham. His widow died, same place, October 21, 1746. See *Lane Family*.

Children of Robert⁵ and Elizabeth (Lane) Avery:—

9. i. Elizabeth⁶, was born in Dedham, Dec. 21, 1677. Married, Aug. 6, 1697, William Bullard, born May 19, 1673; he was a son of Isaac and Ann (widow of John Wight) Bullard, of Dedham.
Elizabeth (Avery) Bullard died Jan. 28, 1746-7. William Bullard died Feb. 9, 1746-7. They had five children.
10. ii. Rachel⁶, was born in Dedham, Sept. 7, 1679. Married, May 14, 1702, Michael^{1*} Dwight, born Jan. 10, 1679-80; he was a son of Timothy and Anna (Flint) Dwight, of Dedham.
Michael¹ Dwight died 1761, aged 82. His widow Rachel⁶ (Avery) Dwight died 1775, aged 96. They had six children.
11. iii. Robert⁶, was born in Dedham, Nov. 28, 1681. Died Aug. 21, 1723. "Killed by the falling of a tree."
- +12. iv. John⁶, was born in Dedham; Feb. 4, 1685-6. See *forward*.
13. v. Jonathan⁶, was born in Dedham, Jan. 20, 1694-5. Married, Feb. 1, 1721-2, Lydia Healy, born Feb. 16, 1697; she was a daughter of Nathaniel and Rebecca (—) Healy, of Dedham. They had eight children.
14. vi. Abigail⁶, was born in Dedham, May 8, 1699. Married, June 5, 1722, John Richards, born June 12, 1698; he was a son of John and Judeth (—) Richards, of Dedham. They had seven children.

12. JOHN⁶ AVERY

12. JOHN⁶ AVERY, second son of Robert⁵ and Elizabeth⁵ (Lane) Avery, was born February 4, 1685-6, in Dedham, Mass. (Harvard, 1706). Married, November 23, 1710, Ruth³ Little, born November 23, 1686; she was the eldest daughter of Ephraim² and Mary (Sturtevant) Little, of Marshfield, Mass., and great grand daughter of Richard¹ Warren, who came in the *Mayflower*.

* "On May 2, 1723, Michael Dwight, administrator of the estate of Robert⁵ Avery of Dedham, deceased, paid for gloves for the funeral of said Avery, to Benjamin Fitch of Boston, £7. 13. 0." *Avery Genealogy*, 1893, p. 82.

Michael Dwight's grandfather, John Dwight, came to America in 1634, with wife Hannah and three children. In 1644 he was one of the 41 men present at the town meeting which decided on the first free school supported by the town in America. See *Wheeler Family*, *re. free schools*.

Ruth (Little) Avery died October 1, 1732, leaving nine children, one son, Job⁷ Avery, having died May 9, 1722. See *Warren-Little Families*.

John⁶ Avery, married, second, July 3, 1733, Ruth Knowles, born November —, 1694; she was the third daughter of Samuel and Mercy (Freeman) Knowles, of Eastham, Mass., and grand daughter of Hon. John and Mercy (Prentice) Freeman; and great grand daughter of Gov. Thomas and Patience (Brewster) Prentice; and great-great-grand daughter of Elder William Brewster, the *Mayflower* passenger. Hence John⁶ Avery's second wife, as likewise his first, was of Pilgrim stock.

Ruth (Knowles) Avery died November 1, 1745.

John⁶ Avery married, third, June 24, 1748, Mrs. Mary Rotch, of Provincetown and Boston. John⁶ Avery died April 23, 1754.

Children of John⁶ Avery by his first wife, Ruth (Little) Avery:—

15. i. John⁷, was born in Truro, Mass., Aug. 24, 1711. (Harvard, 1731). Married, June 13, 1734, Mary Deming, born—, 1706, in Boston. She died Dec. 2, 1763. He died March 31, 1796. They had six children.

Extract from the original will of John⁷ Avery, in the Probate Office, Boston.

"Being also desirous that my children may enjoy my estate in such manner as I judge is according to their different circumstances in life, not making distinction for the different love or esteem I bear to one more than to the other, as they are all equally dear to me." He names his daughter Mary Collins, his daughter Ruth Price, his daughter Hannah Jackson, and his only son, John⁸ Avery*, whom he makes residuary legatee and sole executor. Will proved, April 12, 1796.

- +16. ii. Ephraim⁷, was born in Truro, April 22, 1713. (Harvard, 1731). See *forward*.

17. iii. Ruth⁷, was born in Truro, July 26, 1715. Married, Sept. 6, 1733, Rev. Jonathan Parker, born 1705, son of Judge Daniel

* John⁸ Avery, third child and only son of John⁷ and Mary (Deming) Avery, of Boston, was born Sept. 2, 1739 (Harvard, 1759). Married, April 18 or 20, 1769, Mary, born 1748, daughter of Hon. Thomas and Deborah (Fletcher) Cushing, of Boston.

John⁸ Avery, after serving as Deputy Secretary of Massachusetts for a number of years, and Secretary twenty-six years, 1778-1804, died in Boston, June 7, 1806. His widow died Oct. 23, 1823. They had ten children.

- Parker, of Plympton, Mass. She died May 17, 1745. He died April 24, 1776. They had five children.
18. iv. Elizabeth⁷, was born in Truro, March 5, 1716-17. Married, —, John Draper, born —; he was a son of Capt. James Draper, of Boston. John Draper died Nov. 8, 1746. His widow Elizabeth⁷ (Avery) Draper died Sept. 18, 1766. They had one child.
19. v. Robert⁷, was born in Truro, May 26, 1719. Married, —, 1741, Anna Cushman, born —; she was a daughter of Josiah and Susanna (—) Cushman, of Lebanon, Conn. Anna (Cushman) Avery died *after* March 6, 1756, the date when her last child was born. They had seven children.
- John⁸ Avery, by deed May 26, 1747, conveyed to his son, Robert⁷ Avery all his lands in Lebanon "for love and affection." *Land Records*, Vol. 8, p. 351.
- In the Lebanon church record we read: "Bill of Mortality, 1775, Robert⁷ Avery, killed in battle at sea." Letters of administration were granted on the estate, Sept. 13, 1775, to Elisha Lothrop, his brother-in-law.
- "Robert⁷ Avery bought 20 acres of John Little (an uncle?), for £120. Bills of credit, Nov. 19, 1755." *Lebanon Land Records*, Vol. 8, p. 188. Lebanon formerly belonged to Windham Probate District.
20. vi. Job⁷, was born in Truro, April 6, 1721. Died May 9, 1722.
21. vii. Job⁷, was born in Truro, Jan. 14, 1722-3. Married, Dec. 30, 1742, Jane —? born —; daughter of —? He died Jan. 2, 1785. His widow died Nov. 8, 1812, in Natick, Mass. They had nine children.
- Job⁷ Avery was a member of the Board of Selectmen, 1763 to 1766, and town clerk and treasurer from 1767 to 1770.
- Job⁷ Avery owned at least two slaves, one a young negro man named "Larned" whom he received as a gift from his father.
- Among the records is the following: "Violet, a negro woman, a slave of Mr. Avery, made her peace with the Church by acknowledgment, and so was qualified to receive the ordination of baptism. Attest, Caleb Upham, pastor."
22. viii. Mary⁷, was born in Truro, Jan. 19, 1724-5. Married, —, Mr. West. Her father, in his will, dated Jan. 18, 1744, says: "8th, I give and bequeath to my well beloved Daughter Mary West, forty pounds lawful money which she hath already received."
23. ix. Abigail⁷, was born in Truro, June 1, 1727. Married, May 28, 1745, Elisha⁸ Lothrop^{*}, born Dec. 29, 1723; he was a son of

* Brother of Rev. Ephraim⁷ Avery's wife.

Samuel⁷ and Deborah (Crow) Lothrop, of Norwich, Conn.

Elisha⁸ Lothrop's will bears date of Oct. 30, 1754, and the legatees were his "wife, son Ezra⁸, son Elisha⁸, and daughter Deborah Avery." He died Nov. 7, 1754, leaving six children.*

24. x. Ann⁷, was born in Truro, July 6, 1729. Died Aug. 25, 1747.

16. EPHRAIM⁷ AVERY

16. EPHRAIM⁷ AVERY†, second son of John⁶ and Ruth⁸ (Little) Avery, was born in Truro, Mass., April 22, 1713. Married, Sept. 21, 1738, Deborah⁸ Lothrop, born Jan. 9, 1716-17; she was a daughter of Samuel⁷ and Deborah (Crow) Lothrop, of Norwich, Conn. Ephraim⁷ Avery died in Brooklyn, Conn., Oct. 20, 1754‡. Deborah (Lothrop) Avery-Gardiner-Putnam died in Highlands, N. Y., Oct., 14, 1777. See *Lothrop Family*.

Children of Ephraim⁷ and Deborah (Lothrop) Avery:—

25. i. John⁸, was born in Brooklyn, Conn., July 14, 1739 (Yale, 1761). Married, June 26, 1769, Ruth Smith, born May 5, 1741; she was a daughter of Jehiel and Kesia (Wood) Smith, of Brooklyn, Conn. John⁸ Avery died in Huntington, L. I., Aug. 20, 1779. His widow died Oct. 4, 1779. They had three children.

"The name of Mr. John⁸ Avery occurs on the Society's list as schoolmaster of Rye, N. Y., in 1770, with a salary of £10. per annum." He also taught in Huntington, L. I. The following shows the disposal his widow, Mrs. Ruth (Smith) Avery, made of her property and child.

"Personally appeared Before me, Mrs. Hannah Platt, and maketh oath on the Holy Evenjalis of almighty God: that on the 23, of September 1779, as She was With Mrs. Ruth Avery: she heard Mrs. Avery tell her sister Kesiah Smith, that it Was her desire she Wood take her Child and Bring it up and to inable her to do so, she Gave her all that she left, after Paing her dets.

Sworn the 9, of October 1779.

Before me Zophar Platt, Justice.

(Signed) Hannah Platt."

* *Lothrop Family*.

† See *Avery, Fairchild, Park and Lothrop Families* and Bolton's *History of Westchester County, N. Y.*

‡ It is a singular fact, that father, son and grandson all died the same year. Rev. John⁶ Avery died in Truro, Mass., April 23rd, 1754, aged 69. Rev. Ephraim⁷ Avery died in Brooklyn, Conn., October 20th, 1754, aged 41, and Septimus⁸ Avery died October 10th, 1754, aged 5 years.

- +26. ii. Ephraim^{*}, was born in Brooklyn, Conn., April 13, 1741. (Yale, 1761). *See forward.*
27. iii. Samuel[†], was born in Brooklyn, April 13, 1741 (twin brother of Ephraim^{*}). Died soon.
28. iv. Samuel[†], was born in Brooklyn, Nov. 7, 1742. Married, Sept. 27, 1784, Mrs. Mary Roach (Fillis) Achincloss, born March 27, 1760. He died in Halifax, Nova Scotia, Jan. 30, 1836. His widow died, same place, Aug. 25, 1848. They had ten children.
29. v. Elisha[†], was born in Brooklyn, Dec. 3, 1744. Married —? Eunice Putnam, born Jan. 10, 1756; she was a daughter of Maj. Gen. Israel and Hannah (Pope) Putnam[‡], of Pomfret, Conn.
- Elisha^{*} Avery died Jan. 4, 1782, in Boston, leaving one child. Eunice (Putnam) Avery, widow of Elisha^{*} Avery, married, second, Sept. 7, 1783, Brig. Gen. Lemuel Grosvenor, born April 18, 1752; died in Pomfret, Jan. 19, 1833. Eunice (Putnam) Avery-Grosvenor died June 27, 1799. She had five children by her second husband, Lemuel Grosvenor.
30. vi. Elizabeth^{*}, was born in Brooklyn, Dec. 5, 1746. Married, as his second wife, May —, 1777, Rev. Aaron Putnam[§], born Dec. 15, 1733 (Harvard, 1752), of Reading, —? He died Oct. 15, 1813, in Pomfret, leaving five children. His widow died Dec. 7, 1835, in Cherry Valley, N. Y.
31. vii. Septimus^{*}, born in Brooklyn, July 21, 1749. Died Oct. 10, 1754.
32. viii. Deborah^{*}, born in Brooklyn, July 5, 1751. Married, March 4, 1773, Joseph Baker, born Dec. 17, 1748; he was a son of Samuel and Prudence (—)? Baker. Deborah^{*} (Avery) Baker died Feb. 13, 1777, leaving one child.
- "Dr. Joseph Baker married, second, Lucy, daughter of Rev. Ebenezer Devotion, and she survived him thirty-eight years."
33. ix. Ruth^{*}, born in Brooklyn, Jan. 13, 1754. Married, June 4, 1789, as his second wife, John^{*} Brewster, born Jan. 14, 1739; he was a son of Peleg^{*} and Sarah (Smith) Brewster, of Hampton, Conn. Ruth^{*} (Avery) Brewster died May 18, 1823, at Hampton. John^{*} Brewster died, same place, Aug. 18, 1823. They had four children.

* John[†] and Ephraim[†], the two eldest sons of Rev. John^{*} Avery, of Truro, were graduates from Harvard in 1731. And John^{*} and Ephraim^{*}, the two eldest sons of Rev. Ephraim[†] Avery, of Brooklyn, Conn., from Yale in 1761.

† Elisha^{*} Avery wrote to his brother Samuel[†] on April 22, 1769: "Cousin John^{*} Avery of Boston, was last tuesday evening married to Polly Cushing." *See* John[†] Avery, No. 15, of this record.

‡ *History of Putnam Family*, by Eben Putnam, Salem, 1891, Vol. I, p. 184.

§ Aaron Putnam married, first, Rebecca Hall and had five children. He was second cousin to General Israel Putnam.

John⁶ Brewster had married, first, Nov. 6, 1760, Mary Durkee, born Nov. 29, 1741; she was a daughter of William and Abigail (Hovey) Durkee, of Windham, Conn. Mary (Durkee) Brewster died June 4, 1783, at Hampton. By Mary (Durkee) Brewster, John⁶ Brewster had seven children.

"John⁶ Brewster studied medicine with Dr. Barker of Franklin, Conn. Dr. Brewster was the first physician who settled on Hampton Hill, Conn.; was an eminent practitioner and a prominent man in that society."^{*}

† The church now (1734) encouraged the Westlake society in its renewed efforts to seek for a minister, and pursuant to the advice of the ministry it succeeded in securing Mr. Ephraim Avery of Truro, Mass., then residing in Cambridge, who was graduated from Harvard, 1731. The difficulties and differences now vanished and all parties were satisfied with the gifts and abilities together with the conversation of the young candidate (in his 22nd year) and gladly united in calling him to settlement. Capt. Joseph Cleveland, Deacon Williams and Henry Cobb were appointed by the society to treat with Mr. Avery who in view of the fluctuations in currency then prevailing, agreed "To pay him yearly six pence upon the list of all the polls and ratable estate, until it amounts to one hundred and twenty pounds in money or bills of public credit to be fixed with respect to the following commodities, viz: wheat, rye, Indian corn, beef, pork, sheep's wool or flax; or that the salary vary according as the price of them shall rise or fall from the present year. These terms being accepted by Mr. Avery, the prices of the commodities were thus settled June 17th, 1735: wheat ten shillings per bushel, rye-seven, Indian corn 5, beef 4 pence, flax 1 s. wool 3 shillings, pork 6 pence half penny."

The church concurred with the call given by the society. The work on the meeting-house was now hastened. It was voted to build a pulpit and have pews all around the house, only the place for the pulpit and the doors and the stairs excepted; some years passed before these were completed.

26. EPHRAIM⁸ AVERY

26. EPHRAIM⁸ AVERY, second son of Ephraim⁷ and Deborah (Lothrop) Avery, of Brooklyn, Conn., was born April 13, 1741. (Yale, 1761, M. A., King's College, N. Y., 1767). Married, —, 1762, Hannah Platt, born —, 1737, she was a daughter

^{*} *Brewster Genealogy*, Vol. I, p. 189.

† *Larned's History of Windham County, Conn.*

of Hon. Joseph (Yale, 1733*) and Hannah (Whitman†) Platt‡, of Norwalk, Conn. Hannah (Platt) Avery died May 13, 1776, in Rye, N. Y. Ephraim⁸ Avery died, same place, Nov. 5, 1776.

Children of Ephraim⁸ and Hannah (Platt) Avery:—

- 34. i. Hannah Platt⁸, was born in Second River, N. J., April 16, 1763. Married, —, Stephen Barritt.
- 35. ii. Elizabeth Draper⁸, was born in Rye, N. Y., Aug. 29, 1765. Married, —? Mr. Church. She died in the West Indies, Dec. 15, 1799.
- +36. iii. John William⁸, was born in Rye, May 24, 1767. *See forward.*
- 37. iv. Elisha Lothrop⁸, was born in Rye, Nov. 27, 1768.
- 38. v. Joseph Platt⁸, was born in Rye, March 24, 1771.
- 39. vi. Deborah Putnam⁸, was born in Rye, June 1, 1773.

Bolton in his *History of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Westchester County, N. Y.*, says:—

"Soon after the Rev. Ephraim⁸ Avery left college, he went to New Jersey and taught school, at a place called Second River, in the township of Newark. Rev. Isaac Brown, Newark, in his letters of October 6th, 1762, and April 6th, 1763, writes, that Mr. Avery, a young gentleman, graduated from Yale College, has taken care of the school at Second River from December 1st, 1761. While there, he turned his attention to theology, and was considered a very promising young man. He then went to England, and was ordained Deacon and Priest by Dr. Hinchman, Bishop of London, 1765, being well recommended by the clergy of New Jersey and others, and found worthy by the Lord Bishop of London, was appointed to the vacant mission of Rye, N. Y., by Gov. Cadwallader Colden, September 9th, 1765, Rector of Grace Church of the Parish of Rye, including Mamaroneck and Bedford."

On 21st January, 1766, vestry of church "allowed to Rev. Ephraim⁸ Avery, for service as rector of Parish of Rye from August 27th last to January 1st, 1766, £16-3-4, added for 3 days 8s. 6d. and raised salary for January 1st, 1766 to January 1st, 1767, sum of £50." *Fowler's Mss.*

36. JOHN WILLIAM⁸ AVERY

36. JOHN WILLIAM⁸ AVERY, eldest son of Ephraim⁸ and Hannah (Platt) Avery, was born in Rye, N. Y., May 24, 1767. Married, Nov. 16, 1793, Sarah⁸ Fairchild, born Feb. 28, 1773; she was a daughter of John Curtis⁸ and Ruth⁸ (Burch) Fair-

* Dexter's *Yale Biographies*, Vol. 1745-1763, pp. 685-6.

† *Whitman Family*.

‡ *Platt Family*.

§ Tombstone, Orcutt's *History of Stratford*, p. 339.



SILHOUETTE OF SAMUEL PUTNAM¹⁰ AVERY

child, of Stratford, Conn. John William⁹ Avery died in New York, —, 1799. His widow Sarah (Fairchild) Avery died, same place, May 6, 1837.

Children of John William⁹ and Sarah (Fairchild) Avery:—

- 40. i. John William¹⁰, was born in New York, Sept. 24, 1794. In early life he was lost at sea in the *Jeanette*.
- 41. ii. Elisha Lothrop¹⁰, was born in New York, Feb. 27, 1796. Married, 1822, Jane Gunning. She died in New York, Sept. —, 1837, leaving three children. Elisha Lothrop¹⁰ Avery, married, second, April 12, 1839, Sarah Coit, born —, 1807; she was a daughter of David Coit, of New London, Conn. Elisha Lothrop¹⁰ Avery died in Brooklyn, N. Y., Aug. 3, 1878. His second wife and widow died, same place, Feb. 12, 1892. They had four children.
- +42. iii. Samuel Putnam¹⁰, was born in New York, Jan. 1, 1797. *See forward.*
- 43. iv. Sarah Elizabeth¹⁰, was born in New York, Nov. 3, 1798. Married, —? 1817, Ebenezer R. Dupignac, of New York, born Dec. 16, 1794. She died —. He died Nov. —, 1864. They had four children.

42. SAMUEL PUTNAM¹⁰ AVERY

42. SAMUEL PUTNAM¹⁰ AVERY, third son of John William⁹ and Sarah⁶ (Fairchild) Avery, was born in New York, Jan. 1, 1797. Married, Jan. 1, 1821, Hannah Anne⁷ Parke, born Aug. 24, 1804; she was a daughter of Benjamin⁶ and Susanna Maria (Keens) Parke.

Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery died July 24, 1832, in New York. His widow died June 26, 1888, in Jersey City, N. J.

Children of Samuel Putnam¹⁰ and Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery:—

- +44. i. Samuel Putnam¹¹, was born in New York, March 17, 1822. *See forward.*
- 45. ii. Hannah Stanton¹¹, was born in New York, Oct. 12, 1824. Married, May 2, 1854, as his second wife, Charles Russell Cornell, born June 20, 1806; he was a son of Gideon and Hannah (Russell) Cornell of Easton, N. Y.
Charles Russell Cornell died in Belleville, N. J., Sept. 12,

1866. His widow Hannah Stanton¹¹ (Avery) Cornell died, same place, June 25, 1885. They had one daughter.

Charles Russell Cornell's first wife was Maria Cornell, his cousin, born Nov. 20, 1808; she was a daughter of Latham and Louisa Bailey (White) Cornell of Syracuse, N. Y. Maria (Cornell) Cornell died Oct. 4, 1853. They had one son.

46. iii. Susan Jane¹¹, was born in New York, Dec. 11, 1826. Married, Dec. 5, 1850, Stephen Avery of Hudson, N. Y. He died in New York, Jan. 1, 1853. His widow died, in Santa Barbara, Cal., March 18, 1912. They had one son.

47. iv. Benjamin Parke¹¹, was born in New York, Nov. 11, 1828. Married, Nov. 27, 1861, Mary Ann Fuller, born July 13, 1827; she was a daughter of Joseph Kirby and Jane (Quinby) Fuller, of Marysville, Cal.

Benjamin Parke¹¹ Avery died in Pekin, China, Nov. 8, 1875. His widow died in San Francisco, Cal., June 9, 1913. They had no children. He was appointed United States Minister to the Court of China in 1874.

"Mr. Avery was in many respects a remarkable man. He typified the ripest fruitage of our western thought and culture. He was essentially Californian, but he represented the finer feminine side of California—California in those gentler moods of which we see too little. He had the freshness without the brusqueness of the frontier spirit. Perhaps no one person did so much to educate the people of the State in the right direction—to lift the thoughts of men above the sordid interests of the hour and the mean ambitions of personal gain. He embodied in his life and character that spirit of a broader culture, purer morals, and loftier aims which constitute the basis of all healthy growth. He loved California with an almost idolatrous love, but lamented its hard materialism, and strove to make it more worthy of its great destiny. And he was unwearying in his efforts to elevate and refine. The hours that other workers gave to rest and recreation, he devoted to the building up of new aesthetic interests and the study of those gentler arts that uplift society and smooth down the sharp angles of our western life. He was one of those rare men who are estimated rather below than above their true value. His modesty made him shy; and some people, who but half knew him, made the mistake of thinking he lacked force. No man was more firm in upright purpose—could be more courageous in the assertion of honest conviction. His adherence to principle was firm and uncompromising. He was constitutionally incapable of putting a falsehood in print, or perverting facts to partisan uses. His pen was never soiled by an attack upon private character. He abhorred with all the intensity of a pure soul the personalities of journalism."

"His capacity for work was marvelous. We cannot recall a journalist, with perhaps the exception of the late Henry J. Raymond, who could write so rapidly, yet so pointedly and correctly. His well-stored mind poured forth its treasures in a rapid-flowing copious stream. He was equally ready in all departments of journalistic activity. He was an admirable dramatic critic, was well versed in the elementary principles of music, while in the specialty of art criticism he was without a rival among Californian writers. His editorials were models of clear statement and strong but elegant English, while all that he wrote was pervaded by a certain spirit of candor and a power of moral conscience that compelled attention and carried conviction. While the prevailing tone of his mind was serious, few writers could be more delightfully playful, more charmingly humorous."

"Socially Mr. Avery was very lovable. In him all the virtues seemed harmoniously combined. He was absolutely without guile, as he was without vices. His heart overflowed with love for his fellows. He could not bear to think ill of any one, and if a sense of public duty compelled him to criticise, it was done so kindly, so regretfully, that censure lost half its sting. And his friendships were so firm and steadfast, his trust in those he loved so deep and unquestioning! Who that has felt the grasp of his manly hand, and looked into the quiet depths of his kindly eye, can ever forget the subtle influence that crept like a balm into his soul? He lived in and for his friends. Caring little for general society, his social world was bounded by a charmed circle of intimates. He was such a delightful companion; so fresh and bright and genial, so apt in repartee, so quaintly witty, so rich in various learning without taint of pedantry. To know him, to be much in his society, to feel the sweet influence of his pure life, was a boon and blessing. He is dead; but the seed of thought and culture he has sown has not fallen on barren ground. His work survives him. The interests he promoted and the institutions he helped found, are living monuments of his beneficent activity. We shall see him no more in the flesh, but his spirit will long be a pervading presence to hosts of loving hearts." *San Francisco Overland Monthly*, December, 1875.

48. v. Mary Rebecca Halsey¹¹, was born in New York, Aug. 10, 1830. Married, June 7, 1856, Thomas De Witt Talmage (as his first wife), born Jan. 7, 1832; he was a son of David T. and Catherine (Van Nest) Talmage, of Bound Brook, N. J. Mary Rebecca Halsey¹¹ (Avery) Talmage died June 7, 1861, in Philadelphia, Pa., leaving two children.

Thomas De Witt Talmage married, second, Susan C. Whittemore, born —? she was a daughter of Charles and

——? (——?) Whittemore, of Brooklyn, N. Y. Susan C. (Whittemore) Talmage died ——? leaving —— Children. Thomas De Witt Talmage married, third, ——? Elinor (——?) Collier, born ——? she was a daughter of ——? and the widow of Charles Collier, of Alleghany, Pa. Thomas De Witt Talmage died ——, 1902. He was graduated from the New Brunswick, N. J. Theological Seminary, and was pastor of the Presbyterian Church in Belleville, N. J., in 1857-9; Syracuse, N. Y., 1859-61; Philadelphia, Pa., 1861-69; Brooklyn, N. Y., 1869-1892, and Washington, D. C.

49. vi. Charles Russell¹¹, was born in New York, October, 1832. Died in New York, Aug. 5, 1833.

44. SAMUEL PUTNAM¹¹ AVERY

44. SAMUEL PUTNAM¹¹ AVERY, eldest son of Samuel Putnam¹⁰ and Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery, was born in New York, March 17, 1822. (M. A., Columbia University, 1896). Married, Nov. 24, 1844, Mary Ann Ogden, born Dec. 1, 1825; she was a daughter of Henry Aaron and Katharine (Conklin) Ogden, of New York.

Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery died Aug. 11, 1904, in New York City. His widow Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery died April 29, 1911, in Hartford, Conn.

Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery, one of the original Trustees of the Metropolitan Museum of Art, died on August 11th, 1904, after thirty-four years of continuous service.

The following resolutions were adopted by the Trustees:

The early founders of the Metropolitan Museum of Art have nearly all passed away. Presidents Johnston, Marquand, and Rhinelander have gone over to the majority. It now becomes our painful duty to record upon our minutes the death of our late associate and friend, Samuel Putnam Avery.

Mr. Avery was a member of the first Board of Trustees of the Museum and was, until his death, one of its most useful, active, and intelligent members. He brought to the service of the Museum a large experience in the world of art, a mind enriched by travel and trained by the observation and study of the world's famous collections. His conscientious devotion to all his duties



Edwin

Samuel R. Avery



AVERY LIBRARY

was remarkable. His business brought him in frequent contact with the great painters of the last half century, both at home and abroad, and many of the best works of foreign masters passed through his hands. After his retirement from business his activity was continued in the several public institutions in which he was a hardworking trustee.

Mr. Avery was also a most discriminating collector of porcelains, bronzes, and other art objects, and of fine books. His library was small but choice, and was rich in bindings, executed by the famous bibliopegists of the present and former times. It is probable that Mr. Avery's name will be best known and longest remembered by reason of his extraordinary liberality (often concealed from public observation) both to individuals and institutions. A large proportion of the books, prints, bronzes, etc., in the Grolier Club, were presented by him. In nearly all of the art clubs of the city will be found mementos of his thoughtful consideration, and his gifts were not confined to this city alone. This Museum is indebted to Mr. Avery for a valuable collection of medals by Roty, and a large number of paintings and art objects and he was a constant contributor to its library. In Mrs. Avery's name he enriched the Museum with a large collection of rare and valuable antique silver spoons.

The bequest to the New York Public Library of 17,000 etchings, a collection representing the patient and intelligent work of forty years, shows how catholic Mr. Avery was in selecting art treasures and how thoughtful he was for the public welfare in distributing them during his lifetime. In memory of a daughter who died in 1893 Mr. Avery established a library in the Teachers' College, giving his daughter's books, to which he added many others.

The crowning glory of Mr. Avery's beneficence is the architectural library presented to Columbia University in memory of his son, Henry Odgen Avery, a talented young architect. This library is said, upon good authority, to be one of the best in this country on this special subject.

Mr. Avery was a friend to all good men. His regard for those

favored with his intimate acquaintance will always be a fragrant memory. An hour spent in his company among the many attractive objects in his private library was serenely enjoyable. He was a man of the highest ideals, who placed character above all other attainments. As a well-deserved recognition of his long and disinterested service, seventy-five friends presented him with a gold medal on his seventy-fifth birthday.

His example will remain an inspiration for good deeds. He has made the world better worth living in for those who come after him.

Thirty-fifth annual report of the trustees of the Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York, 1905.

Children of Samuel Putnam¹¹ and Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery:—

50. i. Mary Henrietta¹², born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 4, 1845. Died in New York, April 7, 1900.
- +51. ii. Samuel Putnam¹², born in Brooklyn, Oct. 7, 1847; d. Sept. 25, 1920, Hartford, Conn. See Introduction to this volume.
52. iii. Fanny Falconer¹², born in Brooklyn, Nov. 3, 1849; died July 22, 1918, Hartford, Conn.; married Feb. 15, 1881, Manfred Philester Welcher, born Oct. 27, 1850 (Williams College, 1877; Union Theological Seminary, 1880); he is a son of John Philester and Abigail (Lee) Welcher, of Newark, N. Y. They had four children (Welcher), 2 sons and 2 daughters:—
 - i. Emma Parke Avery¹², b. Pleasantville, N. Y., Nov. 26, 1881.
 - ii. Alice Lee¹², b. Pleasantville, N. Y., May 17, 1884.
 - iii. Lester Groome¹², b. Pleasantville, N. Y., July 1, 1885; m. May 1, 1917, Kathryn Kolb, b. June 30, 189-. She is a daughter of George and — (—) Kolb of St. Louis, Mo. They have two children.
 - iv. Avery Ogden¹², b. Pleasantville, N. Y., March 24, 1887.
53. iv. Henry Ogden¹², born in Brooklyn, Jan. 1, 1852. Died in New York, April 30, 1890.

"The death of Henry Ogden¹² Avery removes one of the few organizers and superior workers for the good of the profession at large; one of those who had high ideals of professional intercourse and work, whose time was always at the disposal of the Architectural League and other societies with which he was identified. His acquaintance with all the allied arts made his service valuable; he had great efficiency and ability in organizing and aiding all enterprises that tended to bring architects together and to inculcate an *esprit de corps*. At a time when so



SAMUEL PUTNAMth AVERY MEDAL

OBVERSE AND REVERSE

many think only of the almighty dollar, he sacrificed his own interest in service, and *service* is the hardest thing to get and the most valuable when so unselfish as was his." *The American Architect and Building News*.

The Archaeological Institute of America, New York Society, records its sense of the loss that it has suffered in the death of Henry Ogden¹² Avery "one of its most zealous members, and one who promised to be a chief support and help of the society and the Institute in all its future work. The undertaking of the Institute is new, and has reached but a slight development as yet; but in looking at the possible future, we cannot but feel that one of our chief hopes has been removed in the taking away of Avery. Thoroughly taught, first in the architectural office of a member of this committee, and then, for an unusual number of years, at the *Ecole des Beaux Arts* and a good Paris atelier; afterward engaged in the active practice of his profession in New York, in one of the largest and busiest offices of the city, and independently, he was eminently intelligent, thoughtful, highly instructed, and high-aiming as an architect, as a decorative designer, and as a member of his profession and of the whole community.

In the societies with which he had been connected he was markedly useful, and was willing to sacrifice time and strength for the cause in which he had enlisted; he was not one of those who will accept office for the honor it may give without discharging the duties which it brings with it. In our society he has been a member of the Committee on Membership, and has shown great zeal in that which must be the foundation of all success—the filling up of the roll of members. Other services were to come, and the personal esteem felt for him and our personal regrets at his loss are intensified by our sense of what the cause of archaeology and the study of art have suffered in this premature death."

54. v. Emma Parke¹², born in Brooklyn, Aug. 29, 1853. Died in Brooklyn, Aug. 31, 1857.

55. vi. Ellen Walters¹², born in Brooklyn, Jan. 1, 1861. Died in New York, March 25, 1893.

"Intellectually richly gifted, Ellen Walters¹² Avery made good use of her opportunities for prosecuting the studies in which she took so much delight. Few, even of those who knew her well, were aware of their extent or range.

Not only was she familiar with English literature of the last two centuries particularly, but she was well read in the most eminent of the French and German writers, especially in their poetical works; and was for some years a contributor to the *Home Journal*, of New York, and other periodicals, of versions from the works of Goethe, Heine, Victor Hugo, de Musset,

and others, whose thought and style alike she possessed a singular facility in rendering; and of original poems, in which her high ideals, and her passionate love of nature, were expressed with a delicate fancy and in a melodious rhythmic form.

Miss Avery, too, was no less interested in Church history and in hymnology. She had read most of the works of the leading writers upon those subjects, was fascinated with the natural sciences, especially in the study of works on natural history, had a good knowledge of the science and history of music and of its composers, also was a devoted attendant at the best musical performances, and was pursuing with ardor the study of the Greek and Latin languages." The Ellen Walters Avery collection of books was presented by her mother, to the library of the Teachers' College, New York City.



SAMUEL PUTNAM[®] AVERY MEDAL

OBVERSE AND REVERSE

51. SAMUEL PUTNAM¹² AVERY

Pedigree connection with Robert¹ Avery, of Pill, Somerset County, England, whose will bears date of July 27, 1575.

- 1 Robert¹ Avery, of Pill, Somerset County, England, born —. He died previous to Oct. 14, 1575, that being the date of the proving of his will. He had three sons, William², Richard², Thomas².
- 2 William² Avery, of Congresburie, Winterstoke Hundred, England, born —. He had one son, Robert³; whether there were others, records do not say.
- 3 Robert³ Avery, of Wokingham, Berkshire County, England, born —. His will, found in the Diocese of Doctors' Commons, bears date of March 30, 1642. He married Joanne —? and had three children, William⁴, born 1622, Robert⁴, Frances⁴.
4. Great⁴-grandfather, William⁴ Avery, born in Wokingham, England, —, 1622. Died in Boston, Mass., March 18, 1686. Great⁴-grandmother, Margaret (Allright) Avery, born in England, —. Died in Dedham, Mass., Sept. 28, 1678.
5. Great⁴-grandfather, Robert⁴ Avery, baptized in Barkham, England, Dec. 7, 1649. Died in Dedham, Oct. 3, 1722. Great⁴-grandmother, Elizabeth⁴ (Lane) Avery, baptized in Dorchester, Mass., —, 1655-6. Died in Dedham, Oct. 21, 1746. See *Lane Family*.
6. Great⁴-grandfather, John⁴ Avery, born in Dedham, Feb. 4, 1685-6. Died in Truro, Mass., April 23, 1754. Great⁴-grandmother, Ruth⁴ (Little) Avery, born in Marshfield, Mass., Nov. 23, 1686. Died in Truro, Oct. 1, 1732. See *Little Family*.
7. Great⁴-grandfather, Ephraim⁴ Avery, born in Truro, April 22, 1713. Died in Brooklyn, Conn., Oct. 20, 1754. Great⁴-grandmother, Deborah⁴ (Lothrop) Avery, born in Norwich, Conn., Jan. 9, 1816-17. Died in Highlands, N. Y., Oct. 4, 1777. See *Lothrop Family*.
8. Great⁴-grandfather, Ephraim⁴ Avery, born in Brooklyn, Conn., April 13, 1741. Died in Rye, N. Y., Nov. 5, 1776. Great⁴-grandmother, Hannah (Platt) Avery, born in Norwalk, Conn., —, 1737. Died in Rye, N. Y., May 13, 1776. See *Platt Family*, *Whitman Family*.
9. Great-grandfather, John William⁸ Avery, born in Rye, N. Y., May 24, 1767. Died in New York, —, 1799. Great-grandmother, Sarah⁸ (Fairchild) Avery, born in Stratford, Conn., Feb. 28, 1773. Died in New York, May 6, 1837. See *Fairchild Family*.
10. Grandfather, Samuel Putnam¹⁰ Avery, born in New York, Jan. 1, 1797. Died in New York, July 24, 1832. Grandmother, Hannah Anne⁷ (Parke) Avery, born in New York, April 24, 1804. Died in Jersey City, N. J., June 26, 1888. See *Parke Family*.
11. Father, Samuel Putnam¹¹ Avery, born in New York, March 17, 1822. Died in New York, Aug. 11, 1904. Mother, Mary Ann (Ogden) Avery, born in New York, Dec. 1, 1825. Died in Hartford, Conn., April 29, 1911.
12. Samuel Putnam¹² Avery, was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Oct. 7, 1847. He did not marry. He died in Hartford, Conn., Sept. 25, 1920.

INDEX

PILGRIM FATHERS

- Alden, John, 7, 10
 Allerton, Isaac, 10
 John, 10
 Andrews, Richard, 7
 Avery, Benjamin Parke, ix
 Deborah Lothrop, vi
 Ephraim, viii
 Hannah Parke, xiii
 Henry Ogden, ix
 Jane Greenough, xi
 John, v, viii
 John William, viii
 Mary Ann Ogden, xiii
 Robert, viii, ix, xiii
 Ruth Little, v
 Samuel Putnam, i, iii, vi, viii, ix, x, xiii, xiv, xix
 William, iii, viii, ix, x, xiii, xvi

 Beauchamp, John, 7
 Billington, John, 7, 10
 Bradford, Governor, 8
 William, 10
 Brewster, William, 10
 Brown, Peter, 10
 Butler, William, 8
 Buttenidge, Richard, 10

 Carter, Jane Greenough Avery, xi
 Carver, John, 10
 Mr., 6
 Chilton, James, 10
 Clarke, Richard, 10
 Cooke, Francis, 10
 Crackston, John, 10
 Cushman, Mr., 6
 Robert, 7

 Dix, Abigail, vii
 Edward, iii, vii
 Dotey, Edward, 10

 Eaton, Francis, 10
 English, Thomas, 10
 Fairchild, John Curtiss, vii
 Fairchild, Samuel, vii
 Sarah, vii
 Thomas, iii, vii, xvi
 Fletcher, Moses, 10
 Fuller, Edward, 10
 Samuel, 10

 Gardiner, Richard, 10
 Goodmar, John, 10
 Gosnold, Bartholomew, 8, 9

 Hatherly, Timothy, 7
 Hopkins, Oceanus, 8
 Stephen, 10
 Howland, John, 7, 10

 Jones, Captain, 9

 King Charles I, 5
 William, 7

 Lane, Elizabeth, viii
 Job, iii, viii
 Leister, Edward, 10
 Little, Ann Warren, v
 Ephraim, v, x
 Mary Sturtevant, v
 Ruth, v
 Thomas, iii, v, xvi
 Lathropp, John, vi
 Michael, vi
 Nicholas, vi
 Samuel, vi
 Thomas, vi
 Lothrop, Deborah, vi
 John, iii
 Samuel, vi
 Lowthorp, Christopher, v
 Francis, v
 Marmaduke, v
 Robert, v
 Lowthorpe, Robert, v
 Lowthrop, John, vi
 Lowthropp, John, vi
 Lowthroppe, John, vi
 Robert, vi

Lowthroppe, Thomas, vi

Margeson, Edmund, 10
Martin, Christopher, 7, 10
Mullins, William, 10

Ogden, Mary Ann, xiii

Park, Benjamin, vi
Hannah Stanton, vi
John, vi
Joseph, vi
Rev. Joseph, x
Richard, iii, vi, xiii, xvi
Thomas, vi

Parke, Benjamin, vi, x
Hannah, xiii
Hannah Anne, vi

Platt, Hannah, vii
John, vii

Joseph, vii
Richard, iii, vii

Priest, Degory, 10
Prince, Governor, vi

Ridgdale, John, 10
Robinson, Rev. John, 7
Rogers, Thomas, 10

Shirley, James, 7

Smith, John, 8
Soule, George, 10
Standish, Miles, 10, 11
Stewart, A. T., xiv
Sturtevant, Mary, v

Tilley, John, 10
Tinker, Thomas, 10
Totten, John Reynolds, v, xix
Turner, John, 10

Warren, Ann, v
Richard, iii, v, xvi, 7, 10, 11

Washington, George, vi
Wheeler, Mary, viii

Moses, iii, viii

White, Peregrine, 8
William, 10

Whitman, Hannah, vii
John, iii, vii

Zachariah, vii

Zachery, vii

Zechariah, vii

Williams, Thomas, 10

Winslow, Edward, 10

Gilbert, 10

Winthrop, Fitz John, viii

Wright, Tobias A., iii

Young, Alexander, 8

NAMES OF PLACES, ETC.

American Academy of Political and Social
Science, xviii

Civic Alliance, xviii

Federation of Arts, xviii

Institute of Graphic Arts, xviii

Museum of Natural History, N. Y.,
xviii

Numismatic Society of N. Y. City,
xviii

Scenic and Historic Preservation So-
ciety, xviii

Archaeological Institute of America,
xviii

Society, xviii

Art and Publication Endowment, xvii

League of America, xviii

Artists' Fund Society, xviii

Authorities Cited, i

Avery Arms, xiii

Library, x

Barnstable, Mass., vi

Bibliophile Society, xviii

Billerica, Eng., 7

Board of Trade, xviii

Boston, Mass., xiii, xvii, xviii

Brooklyn Museum, xv

Brooklyn, N. Y., xvii

Bunker Hill, Mass., vi

Burlington, Vt., xviii

Button Island, xv

Cambridge, Mass., vi

Village, Mass., xiii

Cape Cod, Mass., 8, 9, 10

Chicago, Ill., xviii

City History Club, xviii

Civil Service Reform Assn., xviii

Colonial National Bank, xviii

Columbia University, N. Y., x

Connecticut, xv

Conn. Historical Society, xviii

Connecticut Society of Mayflower De-
scendants, xvii

Cornwall, Eng., 8

Dedham, Mass., viii, xiii

Mass. Historical Society, xviii

- Devonshire, Eng., 8
- East Riding, Eng., v
- England, iv, vi, viii, xiii
- Essex, Eng., 7
- Falmouth, Eng., 8
- Geographical Society, xviii
- Grolier Club, N. Y., xviii
- Holland, 6
- Harrogate, Tenn., xvii
- Hartford, Conn., xiii, xv, xvii, xviii
- Theological Seminary, xix
- Iconophile Society, xviii
- Institute of Arts and Sciences, xvii, xviii
- of Fine Arts, xviii
- Lake Champlain, N. Y., xv
- Association, xviii
- Yacht Club, xviii
- Leyden Church, 7
- Holland, 6, 7
- Library, Avery, x
- Columbia University, x
- Lincoln Memorial University, xvii
- Little Pedigree, 30, 31
- London, Eng., 5, 6, 7, 11
- Lowthorpe, Eng., v
- Malden, Mass., viii
- Maria Mitchell Assn., xviii
- Massachusetts, xv
- Mayflower Compact, 9, 10
- Signers, 10
- Metropolitan Museum of Art, N. Y., xviii
- Municipal Art Society, xviii
- Museum of Fine Arts, xviii
- of French Art, N. Y., xviii
- Nantucket, Mass., xviii
- Nat'l Academy of Design, xviii
- Arts Club, xvii, xviii
- Association of Audubon Societies, xviii
- Genealogical Society, xviii
- Indian Association, xviii
- Municipal League, xviii
- Sculpture Society, xviii
- Society of Mural Painters, xviii
- Naval History Society, xviii
- New England Historic Genealogical Society, xviii
- Society, xviii
- New Haven, Conn., vii, viii
- Newton, Mass., x, xiii
- Newtown, Mass., vi
- New York Academy of Science, xviii
- Club, xiv
- Genealogical and Biographical Record, xiii
- Genealogical and Biographical Society, i, xiii, xvi, xvii, xviii, xix
- Historical Society, xviii
- Society of Colonial Wars, xvii
- Zoological Society, xviii
- New York City, N. Y., xiii, xiv, xv, xvii, xviii
- Sons of the Revolution, xvii
- Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts, xviii
- Museum and School of Industrial Art, xviii
- Philadelphia, Pa., xviii
- Pilgrim Church, 6
- Father, 3, 5, 6
- Society, xviii
- Pilgrims, 7, 9
- Journal, 11
- Plimoth Plantation, 5
- Plimouth, vi
- Plymouth Charter, 5
- Eng., 9
- Mass., v, xviii, 7, 11
- Rock, 11
- Preservation of New England Antiquities, xvii
- Pyle, Eng., xiii
- Rhode Island, xvi
- Samuel Putnam Avery Art and Publication Fund, xviii
- Scituate, Mass., vi, 7
- Separatist Church, Leyden, 6
- Ship, "Ann," 7, 8
- "Concord," 8
- "Fortune," 7, 8
- "Handmaid," 7
- "Little James," 7, 8
- "Mayflower," 6, 7, 8
- "Shallop," 11
- "Speedwell," 6
- Society for Savings, xviii
- Somerset Co., Eng., xiii
- Southampton, Eng., 6, 7
- Staffordshire, Eng., vi
- Stratford, Conn., vii
- St. Nicholas Society of N. Y. City, xvii
- Union League Club, xviii
- United States, xiv
- University of Pennsylvania, xviii
- Virginia Company, 5

Wadsworth Athenaeum and Morgan
Memorial Museum, xvii
Washington, D. C., xviii
Watertown, Mass., vi
Watkinson Library, xvii

Westerly, R. I. Historical Society, xviii
Weymouth, Mass., vii

York, Eng., v

WARREN FAMILY

Alden, John, 16
Bartlett, Joseph, 17
Mary Warren, 17, 20
Robert, 17, 19
Blackwell, Sarah, 20
Bradford, Mercy Warren, 21

Cary, Jno., 18
Chilton, Marie, 16
Church, Benjamin, 19
Elizabeth Warren, 19, 20
Joseph, 19
Richard, 19

Collier, Jane, 20
William, 20
Cooke, Francis, 17, 18, 19
Hester, 18
John, 17, 18
Sarah, 18
Sarah Warren, 17, 20
Cooper, Humilitie, 16
Crackston, John, 16

Delano, Jonathan, 20
Mercy, 20

Eaton, 16

Faunce, John, 21
Patience Morton, 21
Priscilla, 21
Thomas, 21

Gibbs, Alice, 20
Thomas, 20
Goodman, John, 16
Greene, Elizabeth, 20

Harlowe, William, 17
Harmon, Edward, 19
John, 19

Holmes, Obadiah, 18

Little, Ann Warren, 20, 21
Thomas, 21

Mather, Cotton, 17
Morton, Ephraim, 20
George, 21
Patience, 21

Pope, Seth, 18

Reyner, Rev. John, 17
Rider, Sam, 17

Sampson, Henry, 16
Snow, Abigail Warren, 19, 20
Anthony, 19
Southworth, Thomas, 20
Standish, Miles, 16

Walker, Sarah, 20, 21
Warren, Abigail, 15, 19, 20
Ann, 15, 17, 20, 21
Benjamin, 21
Elizabeth, 15, 16, 17, 19, 20, 21
James, 20, 21
Joseph, 20, 21
Mary, 15, 17, 20
Mercy, 21
Mrs. Richard, 21
Nathaniel, 20, 21
Patience, 21
Priscilla Faunce, 21
Richard, 13, 15, 16, 17, 20, 21
Sarah, 15, 17
Sarah Walker, 20, 21
White, William, 16
Williams, Roger, 18
Thomas, 16
Winslow, Edward, 16, 19
Josiah, 19
Kaneline, 19

NAMES OF PLACES, ETC.

Agawam, 21

Boston, Mass., 19
Bridgewater, Mass., 21

Cape Cod, Mass., 15

Dartmouth, Mass., 16, 17, 18
Dedham, Mass., 19

Duxbury, Mass., 18, 20
 Eel River, Plymouth, 16, 17, 20, 21
 Greenwich, Eng., 15
 Hingham, Mass., 19
 Hobshole, 16, 19
 Holland, 18
 Kent County, Eng., 15
 London, Eng., 16
 Marshfield, Mass., 19
 Middleboro, Mass., 21
 Middleborough, Mass., 20
 New Plimoth, Mass., 17
 New Plymouth, Mass., 16
 Pilgrims, 16

Plimoth Plantations, 15
 Plymouth Church, 17
 Colony, 19, 20
 Colony Records, 16
 Mass., 13, 15, 16, 17, 19, 20, 21
 Militia, 20
 Tax List of 1632-3, 16
 Prenc's Bottom, 20
 Puncckateesett, 20
 Rocky Nook, 17
 Sandwich, Mass., 19
 Ship, "Ann," 15, 16, 17, 19, 20, 21
 "Mayflower," 15, 16, 17, 18
 "Speedwell," 18
 Taurton, Mass., 21
 Wellingsley, Eng., 16, 17, 19

LITTLE FAMILY

Avery, Deborah Lothrop, 30
 Hannah Anne Parke, 31
 Hannah Platt, 30
 John, 29, 30
 John William, 31
 Margaret, 29
 Mary Ann Ogden, 31
 Ruth Little, 27, 29, 30
 Samuel Putnam, 30, 31
 Sarah Fairchild, 31
 William, 29
 Bailey, Abigail, 28
 Bartlett, Mary Warren, 25
 Robert, 25
 Chilton, Mary, 27
 Church, Elizabeth Warren, 28
 Richard, 28
 Clarke, Sarah, 28
 Crome, Wm., 27
 Ellwood, W., 29
 Fairchild, Sarah, 31
 Fobes, Constant, 29
 Foster, Richard, 25
 Gray, Anna Little, 28
 Edward, 27
 Mary Winslow, 27

Gray, Sarah, 27
 Thomas, 28
 Howland, Joseph, 27
 Jones, Joseph, 26
 Patience Little, 26
 Keene, Abigail Little, 26
 Josiah, 26
 Little, Abigail, 26
 Abigail Bailey, 28
 Ann Warren, 25, 26, 27, 30
 Anna, 28
 Barnabas, 29
 Bethiah Thomas, 26
 Constant Fobes, 29
 David, 28
 Elizabeth Southworth, 28
 Ephraim, 26, 27, 28, 29
 Fobes, 29
 Hannah, 26
 Isaac, 26
 John, 29
 Lemuel, 29
 Luther, 26
 Mary, 29
 Mary Sturtevant, 27, 28, 29, 30
 Mercy, 26, 27
 Patience, 26
 Ruth, 26, 27, 29, 30

Little, Samuel, 26, 27, 28
 Sarah Clarke, 28
 Sarah Gray, 27
 Thomas, 23, 25, 26, 27, 29, 30
 William, 29
 Lothrop, Deborah, 30

Oakman, Ruth, 29
 Tobias, 29
 Ogden, Mary Ann, 31
 Otis, Job, 28
 John, 28
 Mercy Little, 27, 28

Parke, Hannah Anne, 31
 Pearse, William, 26
 Peirce, Michael, 26
 Platt, Hannah, 30

Sawyer, John, 26
 Mercy Little, 26
 Rebecca Snow, 26
 Snow, Abigail Warren, 26

Snow, Anthony, 26
 Josiah, 26
 Rebecca, 26
 Southworth, Elizabeth, 28
 Sturtevant, Mary, 27, 28, 29, 30
 Samuel, 27

Thomas, Bethiah, 26
 Tilden, Hannah Little, 26
 Stephen, 26
 Tincome, Ephraim, 27

Warren, Abigail, 26
 Ann, 25, 26, 27, 30
 Elizabeth, 25, 30
 Joseph, 25
 Mary, 25
 Richard, 25, 26, 29, 30
 White, Abijah, 29
 Ann, 29
 Winslow, John, 27
 Mary, 27
 Mary Chilton, 27

NAMES OF PLACES, ETC.

Barkham, Eng., 29
 Berkshire Co., Eng., 29
 Boston, Mass., 28
 Bristol, R. I., 27
 Brooklyn, Conn., 30
 Brooklyn, N. Y., 31

Christian Union Church, Truro, 29

Dedham, Mass., 29

Eel River, Plymouth, 25

Hartford, Conn., 31
 Highlands, N. Y., 30
 Hingham, Mass., 26

Jersey City, N. J., 31

King Philip's War, 27
 King William's War, 26

Little Compton, Mass., 28
 Little Compton, R. I., 28, 29
 Littletown, Mass., 26
 London, Eng., 29

Marshfield, Mass., 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30
 Mayflower Descendant, 25

Mayflower, Passenger, 25, 29

New Plimoth, Mass., 26
 New York, N. Y., 31
 North Truro, Mass., 29
 Norwich, Conn., 30

Pewter Plates, 29
 Tankards, 29
 Pilgrim Republic, 28
 Plymouth Colony Troops, 26
 County Militia, 26
 First Church, 28
 Mass., 23, 26, 27, 28, 30
 Wills, 28, 29

Rehoboth, Mass., 26
 Rye, N. Y., 30, 31

Scituate, Mass., 26, 27, 28, 30
 Sea View, Mass., 26
 Ship, "Ann," 25, 26
 "Mayflower," 25, 26, 27, 29, 30
 Silver Cups, 29
 Stratford, Conn., 31

Truro, Mass., 29, 30

Warren Pedigree, 30

LOTHROP FAMILY

- Abel, Joshua, 80
 Mechetable Smith, 80
 Adgate, Hannah, 79, 80, 86
 Akeit, Anne, 55
 Elizabeth, 55
 Isabel, 55
 Jaime, 55
 Wm., 55
 Akett, Catherine Lowthroppe, 55
 William, 55, 56
 Aniball, Anthony, 66
 Anniball, —, 60
 Ansell, Mary, 72, 73
 Avery, Abigail, 83
 Deborah Lothrop, 82, 84, 86
 Ephraim, 84, 86
 Hannah Platt, 87
 Hannah Anne Parke, 87
 James, 76
 John, 84
 John William, 87
 Mary Ann Ogden, 87
 Ruth Little, 84
 Samuel Putnam, 87
 Sarah Fairchild, 87
 William, 84

 Backus, Ann, 82
 Elizabeth Huntington, 82
 Joseph, 82
 Barnes, Robert, 53
 Barnet, Humphrey, 57
 Basset, Elizabeth, 80
 William, 72
 Bingham, Mary, 82
 Bishop, Amy, 83
 Elizabeth, 83
 Bliss, Elizabeth, 78, 81
 Rebecca, 78, 79, 81
 Thomas, 78, 79, 81
 Bradford, Governor, 73
 Mr., 64
 Brearwood, John, 42
 Brewster, Mr., 76
 Brigham, John, 40
 Bulkley, Rev. Gershom, 76
 Burne, William, 53
 Rynks, Henry, 53
 Robert, 53

 Carew, Ebenezer, 82
 Eunice, 82
 Calkins, Hugh, 79
 Sarah, 79
 Cardener, Thos., 55
 Carleton, Rev. Mr., 62

 Caulkins, Miss, 81
 Chapman, John, 40
 Chester, J. L., 40
 Chickett, Josiah, 63
 Claghorn, Bethya, 74
 Clark, Abigail, 73
 Abigail Lothroppe, 74
 Elizabeth, 41, 54, 55, 86
 James, 74
 Susanna Ring, 74
 Thomas, 41, 74
 Clarke, Thomas, 73
 Susanna, 73
 Susanna Ring, 73
 Cobb, James, 74
 Mary, 74, 75
 Mary Tilson, 74
 Cobbes, —, 60
 Coit, Joseph, 80
 Coke, Isabell, 53
 Colsgain, Mary, 74
 Cooke, John, 65
 Coppendale, —, 54
 Jane Lowthroppe, 54
 Crocker, Elizabeth, 73
 Crow, Deborah, 82, 83, 86
 Cudworth, —, 60
 James, 60, 61, 70
 Mr., 62

 Deane, Mr., 63
 De Bradfeld, Agnes, 38
 Peter, 38
 De Haslerton, Alice, 37
 John, 37, 38
 Thomas, 37
 De Louthorp, Robert, 37, 38
 De Lowthorpe, Walter, 38
 Denes, Mary Lothrop, 73
 Devotion, Martha, 82
 Doane, Abigail, 77
 John, 77
 Dodson, Abigail, 73
 Dugdale, William, 43, 45, 47
 Dyer, John, 82

 Eaton, Sam., 59
 Samuel, 59
 Edward I., 38
 Edward III., 37
 Edwards, William, 40
 Elderkin, John, 76, 77
 Eglesfield, John, 53
 Emerson, Barbara Lothroppe, 71
 John, 71
 Eshton, Richard, 53

- Ewer, Sarah Larned, 71, 72
 Thomas, 71
 Fairchild, Sarah, 87
 Farnham, Mrs., 83
 Fenby, Henry, 55
 Fenle, Richard, 52
 Fisher, William, 53
 Fitch, Lucy, 82
 Simon, 82
 Flower, William, 43
 Will^m, 45
 Foster, —, 60
 Foxe, Margaret, 43
 Richard, 43
 Freeman, Bathsewa, 74
 Mr., 75
 Fuller, Ann, 70
 Edward, 70
 Elizabeth Lothrop, 73
 Hannah, 74
 Jane Lothrop, 70
 John, 74
 Samuel, 70
 Gallant, John, 55, 56
 Mary Lowthroppe, 55, 56
 Gardiner, Deborah Lothrop Avery, 84
 John, 84
 Gardner, Susanna, 42
 Gillson, —, 60
 Glover, Robert, 45
 Glover, Richard, 40
 Robert, 43, 45
 Grant, Martha Huntington, 79
 Noah, 79
 Ulysses S., 79
 Halstead, Mary Henrietta, 40
 Hammond, William, 62
 Harryson, Katherine, 41
 Hatherly, —, 60
 Hedge, Thankful, 74
 Hedon, William, 40
 Hemingway, Sam^l, 74
 Henry VIII, 51, 83, 86
 Henshewe, George, 44
 Hewes, —, 60
 John, 63
 Hill, Henry, 44
 Hinckley, Bethya, 74
 Governor, 73
 Thomas, 72
 Hodgeson, Elline, 54
 Elizabeth, 54
 Jane, 54
 Margaret Lowthroppe, 52, 54
 Robert, 52, 54
 Holbeighe, Edward, 44
 Hooker, —, 58
 Hough, Anne Lothrop, 79
 Edward, 79
 Sarah Calkins, 79
 William, 79
 Howland, Mary Lothrop, 74
 Hoyeson, Robert, 53
 Hull, Mr., 67
 Huntington, Abigail Lothrop, 79
 Elizabeth, 82
 Eunice, 82
 John, 79
 Martha, 79
 Ruth Rockwell, 79
 Hutchinson, Elisha, 74
 Jackson, John, 44
 Jacob, Rev. Henry, 57
 Jervis, Thomas, 53
 Johnson, Elizabeth, 41
 Margaret, 41
 Robert, 53
 Kirby, Anthony, 40
 Kirtland, —, 80
 Larned, Sarah, 71, 72
 William, 71
 Lathorpe, Alice, 41, 45
 Alice Lilly, 45
 Elizabeth, 46, 47
 Jane, 46, 47
 John, 45, 47
 Margery, 41
 Mary, 46, 47
 Mary Salte, 45
 Michell, 45
 Nicholas, 47
 Samuel, 41, 46, 47
 Susanna, 41
 Tho., 47
 Thomas, 45
 Lathrop, Elijah, 82
 Gervice, 40
 John, 59, 69
 Mary, 40
 Robert, 40, 41
 Susannah Scott, 41
 Lathrope, Humphrey, 45
 Jane, 45
 Nicholas, 45
 Raffe, 45
 Thomas, 41
 Lathropp, Alice Lilly, 44, 46, 47
 Elizabeth, 44
 Hannah, 41
 Humsfrey, 46, 47
 Humphrey, 44
 Jane, 44, 46, 47

- Lathropp, John, 44, 46, 47
 Mary, 44
 Mary Salte, 44, 46, 47
 Michael, 44, 45
 Michael, 46, 47
 Nicholas, 44, 46, 47
 Ralph, 44
 Ralphe, 44
 Raulfe, 46, 47
 Richard, 41
 Robert, 44
 Samuel, 44
 Thomas, 44, 46, 47
 Laythorpe, Barnabas, 72
 Joseph, 72
 Michael, 43
 Mrs., 69
 Leonard, Charity, 80, 83
 Lewis, Anna, 74
 Ebenezer, 74
 Elizabeth Lothrop, 74
 Joseph, 73
 Lilly, Alice, 44, 45, 46, 47
 Robert, 44, 45, 46, 47
 Linnell, Robert, 62
 Little, Ruth, 84
 Thomas, 84
 Lord, —, 80
 Lothrop, Lothroppe, Lothrop, Abigail,
 74, 79
 Abigail Avery, 83
 Abigail Doane, 77
 Abigail Dodson, 73
 Ann Backus, 82
 Anna, 70, 73
 Anne, 70, 79
 Barbara, 70, 71
 Barnabas, 72, 73, 74
 Bathsha, 74
 Bathsheba, 74
 Bernabus, 73
 Benjamin, 69, 73, 74
 Charity Leonard, 80
 Charity Perkins, 83
 Daniel, 77
 Deborah, 82, 83, 84, 86
 Deborah Crow, 82, 83, 86
 Elijah, 82
 Elisha, 82, 83
 Elizabeth, 73, 74, 77, 78, 80, 83
 Elizabeth Basset, 80
 Elizabeth Bishop, 83
 Elizabeth Clark, 86
 Elizabeth Scudder, 75, 77, 86
 Elizabeth Waterhouse, 79
 Elizabeth Watrous, 79
 Ellen, 86
 Ezra, 82, 83
 Lothrop, Lothroppe, Lothrop, Han-
 nah, 80, 83, 87
 Hannah Adgate, 79, 80, 86
 Hannah Fuller, 74
 Hope, 72
 Israel, 78, 79, 81
 Jane, 70
 Jo., 74, 78
 John, 49, 65, 66, 68, 69, 70, 71, 73, 74,
 75, 77, 78, 83, 86
 Joseph, 72, 73, 74, 79, 80
 Joshua, 80, 84
 Judith Woodward, 80
 Lydia Abel, 80
 Margaret, 80
 Martha, 73, 78, 81, 82
 Martha Lothrop, 81
 Martha Perkins, 79
 Mary, 72, 73, 74, 81, 83
 Mary Cobb, 74, 75
 Mary Edgerton, 80
 Mary Lothrop, 81
 Mary Scudder, 79
 Nathaniel, 73, 82
 Rebecca Bliss, 78, 79, 81
 Rev. Elijah, 62
 Rev. John, 51, 70, 73
 Ruth Royce, 77, 78
 Samuel, 72, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 82,
 83, 84, 86
 Sarah, 78
 Sarah Larned Ewer, 71, 72
 Septimus, 83, 84
 Simeon, 83
 Simon, 81, 82
 Susanna Clarke, 73
 Susannah, 83
 Thomas, 62, 69, 71, 72, 80, 83
 Lothrop, Rebekah, 79
 Lowthorp, Alice, 42, 43
 Anne, 42, 43
 Bridget, 43
 Catharine, 39, 40
 Christopher, 42, 43
 Dorothy, 43
 Elizabeth, 40, 42
 Francis, 40, 42, 43
 Isabell, 42
 Jaine, 55
 John, 43
 Katharine, 40
 Margaret, 42, 43
 Margaret Foxe, 43
 Margery, 42
 Marmaduke, 42, 43
 Mary, 41
 Rev. John, 40
 Richard, 38

Lowthorp, Robert, 38, 39, 42, 43
 Lowthorpe, John, 41
 Robert, 39
 Lowthrop, John, 41
 Lowthrope, Robert, 41
 Lowthroppe, Agnes, 52, 54
 Alice Clarke, 52
 Andrew, 55
 Ann Pattison, 55
 Anna, 61
 Anne, 55, 56
 Audrey, 55
 Bartholomew, 54, 55
 Catherine, 55
 Edward, 52, 54
 Elizabeth, 52, 54, 55, 56
 Elizabeth Clark, 54, 55
 Ellen, 51, 52, 54
 Isabel Burne, 54
 Isabell, 52, 55
 Jaine, 54, 55
 Jane, 54, 56
 John, 51, 52, 53, 54, 56
 Joseph, 54, 55
 Katherine Aket, 55
 Lawrence, 52, 53, 54, 55
 Luce, 55
 Margaret, 52, 53, 54, 55
 Mark, 54
 Marks, 55
 Martin, 55
 Mary, 54, 55, 56
 Richard, 54, 55
 Robert, 54, 55
 Robert, 44, 51, 52, 54, 55
 Thomas, 52, 53, 54, 55, 86
 William, 56
 Lyon, Alexander, 55
 Marsh, Alexander, 74
 Bathsha Lothroppe, 74
 Bathsheba Lothroppe, 74
 Bathshewa, 73
 Mason, Gavin, 53
 Hewe, 53
 Mayo, Mr., 67
 Milnchouse, Alice, 44
 Lawrence, 44
 Minor, Thomas, 76
 Mitchell, William, 38
 More, Christopher, 52
 Morley, Francis, 41
 Thomas, 41
 Morton, Nathaniel, 58
 Moss, John, 78
 Martha Lothrop, 78
 Mountaine, George, 55
 Naves, Simon, 53

Nevins, David, 82
 Ogden, Mary Ann, 87
 Otis, Mr., 60, 62, 67, 68
 Palfrey, Mr., 67
 Parke, Hannah Anne, 87
 Patenson, John, 53
 Robert, 53
 Pattison, Ann, 55
 Perkins, Charity, 83
 Charity Leonard, 83
 Elizabeth, 80
 Hannah Lothrop, 80
 Jabez, 80, 83
 Jacob, 80
 Joseph, 79
 Martha, 79
 Pickering, John, 53
 Porter, Elizabeth, 84
 Prence, Thomas, 69
 Prince, Mr., 63, 65, 67
 Prowd, John, 41
 Putnam, Deborah Lothrop Avery Gard-
 ner, 84, 85
 Elizabeth Porter, 84
 Israel, 84, 85
 Joseph, 84
 Rate, Francis, 44
 Ring, Susanna, 73, 74
 Robinson, —, 67
 Beverly, 85
 Fuller, 62
 Isaac, 62
 Rockwell, Ruth, 79
 Rowood, Elizabeth Lowthroppe, 55
 Thomas, 55
 Royce, Elizabeth Lothrop, 78
 Isaac, 78
 Nathaniel, 78
 Robert, 77, 78
 Ruth, 77, 78
 Sarah Lothrop, 78
 Royles, —, 60
 Russell, Mr., 72
 Rev. Jonathan, 62
 Salte, Mary, 44, 45, 46, 47
 Robert, 44, 45, 46, 47
 Sambroke, Mrs. Jeremy, 41
 Scott, Richard, 42
 Susanna Gardner, 42
 Susannah, 41
 Scudder, Elizabeth, 75, 77, 86
 John, 75
 Mary, 79
 Shadlock, Catherine, 53
 Sherret, Pamel, 44

Shipton, Catherine, 44
 Shurtlef, Susana, 74
 Sims, —, 59
 Simson, Alison, 53
 Skeffe, Sarah, 74
 Smith, Mehetable, 80
 Somerby, John, 40
 Sowersby, Henry, 53
 John, 53
 William, 53
 Standish, Miles, 70
 Stiles, Rev. Dr., 61
 Rev. Dr. Ezra, 62
 Stockbridge, Goodman, 71
 Stroughton, Rev. Dr. John, 60
 Sturgis, Abigail, 74
 St. Andrew, John, 44
 St. George, Richard, 43, 45, 46
 St. Quintin, William, 38
 Sutton, John, 40
 Swanns, Alice, 44
 Swinburne, John, 53
 Sywardley, William, 39

 Thompson, Elizabeth Lothrop Royce, 78
 Joseph, 78
 Thornton, Elizabeth, 53
 Tilson, Mary, 74
 Tomlinson, —, 57, 58
 Tracy, Daniel, 81
 Miriam, 80
 Thomas, 80
 Truman, Hannah, 82
 Turner, —, 60
 Humphrey, 63

 Walley, John, 73
 Warren, Richard, 84
 Washington, Gen., 85
 Geo., 85
 Waterhouse, Elizabeth, 79
 Waterman, Elizabeth Lothrop, 80
 John, 80
 Miriam Tracy, 80
 Thomas, 80
 Watrous, Isaac, 79
 Sarah, 79
 Wetherell, Daniel, 77
 Whitcomb, Francis, 44, 46, 47
 Jane Lathropp, 44, 46, 47
 Whitecombe, Francis, 45
 Jane Lathrope, 45
 Whytinge, Marmaduke, 52
 Wickham, —, 55
 Audrey Lowthroppe, 55
 Willes, —, 80
 Wilson, Robert, 53
 Winslow, Mr., 53
 Winthrop, Governor, 75
 John, 75, 76
 Witter, Elizabeth, 83
 Elizabeth Bishop Lothrop, 83
 William, 83
 Wm., 83
 Woodward, Judith, 80
 Wright, Nicholas, 44
 Wykham, Audrie, 55
 Jayne, 55
 Thomas, 55
 Thos., 55
 William, 55
 Wm., 55

NAMES OF PLACES, ETC.

Abbey of St. Edmunds, 38
 Aldermanbury, Eng., 60
 Allhorne, Eng., 56
 America, 70, 71, 72, 86
 Annapolis, 81
 Authorities Cited, 35

 Bardnay, Eng., 41
 Barnstable, Mass., 62, 63, 67, 68, 69, 70,
 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 86
 Church, 69, 72
 Church Register, 75
 Bear Cove, Mass., 60
 Berwick, Eng., 44
 Beverly, Eng., 38
 Black Friars, Eng., 58
 Boston, Mass., 59, 60, 71, 73, 74, 75
 Bozrah, Conn., 83

 Braintree, Mass., 74
 Bridlington, Eng., 39
 British Museum, 63
 Brooklyn, Conn., 84, 86
 Brooklyn, N. Y., 87
 Burton, Eng., 52, 53

 Calehill, Eng., 56
 Cambridge, Eng., 41, 55, 56
 Canterbury, Conn., 82
 Cape Breton, 81
 Cape Cod County, Mass., 72
 Casco, 72
 Chapel of St. John, 38
 Charlestown, Mass., 73
 Chelsea, Eng., 40
 Cherry Burton, Eng., 39, 51, 52, 54, 55,
 86

- Church of St. John, 39
 Clifton, Eng., 41
 Clink Prison, 58
 Connecticut, 62, 81, 84
 County of Chester, Eng., 79
 Dead-Man's Place, 57
 Dedham, Mass., 84
 Dengie, Eng., 55
 Dorchester burying lot, 74
 Duxberry, 71
 Duxbury, Mass., 60
 East Riding, Eng., 37
 Egerton, Eng., 56, 57, 69, 70, 71
 England, 63, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 75, 86
 English Church, 56
 Etton, Eng., 54, 55, 56, 70, 86
 Fetter Lane, 58
 First Church, Norwich, 80, 81, 82
 First Independent Church, 57
 Fishkill, N. Y., 85
 Fort Clinton, 85
 Fort Montgomery, 85
 Fortin, Eng., 43
 Gardiner's Island, N. Y., 84
 Gauch, Eng., 44, 46, 47
 General Court of the Colony, 76
 Gilead, 62
 Gloucester, Mass., 79
 Gloucestershire, Eng., 41
 Gotham, Eng., 44, 46, 47
 Great Driffeld, Eng., 37
 "Hamburg's Independents," 63
 Harswell, Eng., 53
 Hartford, Conn., 79, 87
 Highlands, N. Y., 85, 86
 Horningsheath, Eng., 38
 Ipswich, Mass., 71, 80
 Jathnell, Eng., 41
 Jersey City, N. J., 87
 Kent, Eng., 60, 62
 Kingston-upon-Hull, 40, 41
 Lambeth, Eng., 58, 72
 Marsh, 59
 Lathropp Arms, 44, 46, 47
 Pedigree, 45
 Lee, Eng., 44
 Leicester, Eng., 41
 Leighe, Eng., 44
 Lincolnshire, Eng., 44
 Lisbon, Conn., 79, 80, 83
 London, Eng., 40, 41, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 62, 63, 69, 72, 86
 Will Office, 41
 Lothrop Lot, 78
 Louisburg, 81, 82
 Lowthorp Will, 39
 Lowthorpe, Eng., 37, 39, 42, 43, 45, 51, 83
 Collegiate Church, 37
 Inhabitants, 37
 Lowthroppe Pedigree, 86, 87
 Marton, Eng., 40
 Massachusetts Historical Collections, 63
 Mohegan, 76
 Mumsby, Eng., 40
 Nahantick, 76
 Namussuck, 76
 Narragansetts, 76
 New Concord Society, 83
 New England, 58, 69, 70
 New England Historic Genealogical Register, 61, 62
 Newent, Conn., 79, 82, 83
 Newgate, Eng., 58
 New Harbor Marshes, 63
 New Haven, Conn., 74, 78
 New London, Conn., 75, 76, 77, 79, 82, 86
 New Plymouth, 73
 New Record Office, 58
 New York, N. Y., 87
 North Burton, Eng., 51, 52, 86
 Norwich, Conn., 76, 77, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 86
 Peekskill, N. Y., 85
 Pequot, 75, 76
 Pequot River, 76
 Plimoth, 65, 67
 Plimouth, 62
 Plymouth, Mass., 65, 70, 73, 74, 77, 84
 Pockthorpe, Eng., 42
 Protestant Episcopal Church, Westchester County, N. Y., 86
 Putnam, Conn., 86
 Queens College, Cambridge, Eng., 55, 56
 Queries respecting Baptism, 63
 Rainthorpe, Eng., 52
 Rocky Point, 81
 Roxall, Eng., 44
 Rye, N. Y., 86, 87
 Salem, Mass., 84
 Saybrook, Conn., 79
 Scarborough, Eng., 42, 54

- Scituate and Barnstable Church Records, 62
 Scituate Church, 67
 Scituate, Mass., 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 65, 66, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 86
 Sheributon, Eng., 86
 Ship, "Abigail," 71
 "Ann," 74
 "Griffin," 59
 "Mayflower," 70, 73, 84
 "Swan," 74
 "Swanne," 41
 So. Burton, Eng., 53
 Shoreditch, Eng., 40
 Shrewsbury, Eng., 41
 South Dalton, Eng., 52, 54, 55
 Southminster, Eng., 56
 Southwark, Eng., 57
 St. John's College, Cambridge, Eng., 41
 St. Mary's Church, 60
 Staffordshire, Eng., 43, 44
 Star Chamber Records, 58, 59
 Stratford, Conn., 87
 Surrey, Eng., 41
 Swan's Yard, Eng., 40
 Sywardley, Eng., 39
 Tillingham, Eng., 56
 Tolland, Conn., 79
 Torksey, Eng., 44, 45, 47
 Truro, Mass., 84, 86
 Uncas, 76
 Virginia, 57
 Vital Records, 40
 Walkington, Eng., 52, 55
 Wallingford, Conn., 77, 78
 Watertown, Mass., 62
 Westchester County, N. Y., 86
 Westchester, Eng., 79
 West Point, N. Y., 84
 Westwood, Eng., 54
 Whepsted, Eng., 38
 Windham, Conn., 82
 Windham County, Conn., 84
 Yale College, 61, 62
 Library, 62
 York, Eng., 51, 52, 86
 Yorkshire, Eng., 38, 45, 51, 54, 55, 83, 86
 County, Eng., 70
 Yoxall, Eng., 44, 46, 47

PARK FAMILY

- Angel, Jeremiah, 105
 Andrews, William, 102
 Wm., 103
 Avery, Benjamin Parke, 110
 Charles Russell Cornell, 110
 Ellen Walters, 111
 Emma Parke, 111
 Fanny Falconer, 111
 Hannah Anne Parke, 106, 110, 112
 Hannah Stanton, 110
 Henry Ogden, 111
 John William, 110
 Mary A. Fuller, 110
 Mary Ann Ogden, 111, 112
 Mary Henrietta, 111
 Mary Rebecca Halsey, 110
 Samuel Putnam, 110, 111, 112
 Sarah Fairchild, 110
 Stephen, 110
 Susan Jane, 110
 Susan Jane Avery, 110
 William, 110
 Babcock, James, 105
 Bacon, David, 100
 Bardet, John, 105
 Bartlett, Hannah, 102
 Joseph, 96
 Mehitable, 102
 Billings, Elizabeth, 101
 Bond, William, 100
 Bostock, Edward, 98
 Brewster, Love, 98
 Sarah Collier, 98
 Champlin, Eunice, 105, 107
 Samuel, 105
 Sarah Pendleton, 107
 William, 107
 Chapman, Abigail, 106
 Collier, Jane, 98
 Sarah, 98
 William, 98
 Conklin, Katharine, 111
 Cooke, Gregory, 96, 100
 Joseph, 96, 99
 Cornell, Charles Russell, 110
 Hannah Stanton Avery, 110
 Cotton, Mr., 95
 Coyne, Hannah Anne Parke Avery, 110
 John Nicholas, 110
 Crandall, William, 105

Crane, Margery, 99, 111

Dix, Abigail, 99, 111

Edward, 99

Jane Wilkinson, 99

Dudley, Deputy Governor, 92

Dummer, Jeremiah, 96, 100

Eliot, Rev. John, 93, 96

Fairchild, Sarah, 110

Thomas, 110

Fiske, Abigail Park, 100, 101

Elizabeth, 101

Hannah Richards, 101

John, 101

Martha, 101

Nathan, 100, 101

Sarah Wyeth, 101

Fuller, John, 96, 99

Judge, 94

Mary A., 110

Gardner, Rebecca, 103

Gavit, Ezekiel, 105

William, 106

Giles, Elizabeth, 109

Gilbert, 109

Mary, 109

Greene, Abigail, 103, 106, 112

Harty, —, 99

Margaret, 99

Holland, Elizabeth Park, 102

John, 102

Nathaniel, 102

Sarah, 102

Hotten, John Camden, 97

Hyde, Jonathan, 96

Samuel, 96, 97

Jackson, Edward, 96, 97, 100

John, 97

Jobson, John, 101

Keebe, James, 97

Keens, Joseph, 109

Mary Giles, 109

Susanna Maria, 109, 112

Kemball, Hannah, 102

Hannah Bartlett, 102

Henry, 102

John, 102

Susanna, 102

King, Sarah, 101

Knapp, John, 101

Sarah Park, 100, 101

Sarah Young, 101

Lane, Job, 110

Lawrence, Abigail, 102

Lydia, 102, 103

Samuel, 102

Little, Thomas, 110

Lothrop, John, 110

Mayhew, Thomas, 96

Mason, Hugh, 98

Miller, Elizabeth, 102, 103

Morse, Dorothy, 103

Elizabeth Park, 103

Elizabeth Sawtel, 103

Hester Peirce, 103

Joseph, 103

Ninegret, George, 103

Ogden, Henry Aaron, 111

Katharine Conklin, 111

Mary Ann, 111, 112

Ormes, John, 102

Park, Abigail, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104

Abigail Chapman, 106

Abigail Dix, 99, 102, 111

Abigail Greene, 103, 106, 112

Abigail Lawrence, 102

Ann Spring, 102

Anne, 106

Benjamin, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109,

112

Deliverance, 103

Edward, 100, 101

Elizabeth, 99, 100, 102, 103

Elizabeth Billings, 101

Elizabeth Miller, 102, 103, 111

Esther, 102

Eunice Champlin, 107

H. S., 109

Hannah Anne, 106, 109, 110, 112

Hannah Kemball, 102

Hannah Stanton, 107, 109

Hannah Stanton York, 106, 108, 109,

112

Henry, 106, 107

Isabell, 99

John, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105,

106, 107, 111

Jonathan, 100, 101, 102

Jonathan Green, 105

Jonathan Greene, 106, 107

Joseph, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 109,

111

Lydia Lawrence, 102, 103

Margery, 97, 98, 99, 101

Margery Crane, 99, 111

Martha Fiske, 101

Mary, 103, 106

- Park, Rebecca, 100, 101
 Rev. Joseph, 104, 107
 Rev. Mr., 104
 Richard, 89, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 109, 111
 Samuel, 106
 Sarah, 100, 101
 Sarah Collier Brewster, 98
 Sarah King, 101
 Solomon, 102, 103
 Susan, 107
 Thomas, 96, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 105, 106, 107, 111
 Parke, Benjamin, 109, 112
 Richard, 100
 Sarah, 98
 Susanna, 109
 Susanna Maria Keens, 109, 112
 Peirce, Hester, 103
 John, 103
 Pendleton, Ann, 105
 Anne Park, 106
 Peleg, 106
 Sarah, 107
 Perk, Elizabeth, 98
 Isabell, 98
 Margery, 98
 Richard, 98
 Phillips, Sarah, 102
 Prentice, Thomas, 94
 Rannals, Mary, 101
 Rathbun, Christopher, 104
 Richards, Hannah, 101
 Ross, Isaac, 105
 Rouse, Hannah Anne Parke Avery
 Coyne, 110
 John Owen, 110
 Sanger, Isaac, 103
 John, 101
 Mary Park, 103
 Mary Rannals, 101
 Rebecca Park, 100, 101
 Richard, 101
 Saunders, Ann, 105
 Saunders, Anna, 105
 Daniel, 105
 Sawtel, Elizabeth, 103
 Shaw, Jemima, 106
 Shepard, Rev. Thomas, 96
 Samuel, 96, 100
 Sherman, John, 98
 Spring, Ann, 102
 Elinor, 102
 Henry, 102
 John, 96, 98, 100, 102
 Mehitable Bartlett, 102
 Stone, Ebenezer, 94
 Talmadge, Mary Rebecca Halsey Avery, 110
 Rev. T. De Witt, 110
 Taylor, Humphrey, 105
 Ward, John, 94, 100, 101
 Warren, General, 108
 Nathaniel, 98
 Richard, 110
 Welcher, Fanny Falconer Avery, 111
 Rev. Manfred Philester, 111
 Wheeler, Moses, 110
 Whitmore, —, 99
 Francis, 99
 Isabell Park, 99
 John, 99
 Margaret Harty, 99
 Whittemore, Abigail Park, 103
 Nathaniel, 103
 Rebecca Gardner, 103
 Samuel, 103
 Wilcock, Joseph, 105
 Wilkinson, Jane, 99
 Williams, Isaac, 96, 100
 Winship, Edward, 99
 Elizabeth Park, 99
 Wiswall, Elder, 96, 98
 Wyeth, Sarah, 101
 York, Hannah Stanton, 106, 109, 112
 James Stanton, 106
 Jemima Shaw, 106
 Yorke, Stanton, 105

NAMES OF PLACES, ETC.

- Act of Division, 99
 America, 99, 103, 104, 107
 American Army, 108
 War, 108
 Authorities Cited, 91
 Bayonne, N. J., 110
 Bemis' Mills, 100
 Billerica, Mass., 97
 Boston Harbor, 95
 Boston, Mass., 92, 96, 97, 108, 111
 Braintree, Mass., 95
 Brighton, Mass., 93, 96
 British Army, 108
 Brookline, Mass., 96
 Brooklyn, N. Y., 111, 112
 Bunker Hill, Mass., 106, 108, 112

Cambridge Church, 97
 Farms, Mass., 101
 Mass., 92, 93, 94, 95, 97, 99, 100, 101,
 103, 110, 111
 Meeting House, 97
 Village, 93, 94, 96, 100
 Charles River, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 99, 100
 Charlestown, Mass., 92, 99
 Charlestown, R. I., 103, 104, 106, 107,
 108, 109, 112
 Columbia University, N. Y., 110
 Concord, Mass., 101
 Connecticut, 95
 Connecticut River, 95
 Court of Assistants, 96
 Crown Point, 107
 Dedham, Mass., 96, 110
 Dorchester, Mass., 92
 Duxbury, Mass., 100
 England, 94, 97, 99, 111
 Fort Willam Henry, 107
 Fresh Pond, 93
 General Court, 93, 94
 Hartford, Conn., 111, 112
 Harvard College, 92, 93
 Holliston, Mass., 103
 Ipswich, Eng., 102, 103
 Ipswich River, 95
 Ireland, 110
 Jersey City, N. J., 110, 112
 Killingly, Conn., 103
 King Philip's War, 99, 101
 Lake Champlain, N. Y., 107
 Lake George, N. Y., 107
 Lexington Alarm, 107
 Mass., 99
 Livingston, Mass., 99
 London, Eng., 97, 98, 101
 Malden, Mass., 110
 Medford, Mass., 99

Menetomic River, 99
 Merrimack River, 95
 Mount Wallaston, 95
 Narragansett, 103
 Newark, N. Y., 111
 New Cambridge, 93, 94
 New England, 93, 94, 98
 New Haven, Conn., 110
 New Plymouth, 100
 Newport, R. I., 107
 Newton, Mass., 92, 93, 94, 96, 97, 101,
 102, 103, 111
 Newtown, Mass., 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 100,
 102
 New York City, N. Y., 109, 110, 111, 113
 Nonantum, 93
 Park Pedigree, 111, 112
 Parkevale, Pa., 106
 Pennsylvania, 107
 Plymouth First Church Records, 98
 Mass., 110, 111
 Revolution, 107
 Rhode Island, 104, 108
 Colonial Records, 107
 Roxbury, Mass., 92
 Scituate, Mass., 110
 Searsport, Me., 106
 Ship, "Confidence," 101
 "Defence," 97, 99, 111
 "Elizabeth," 102, 103
 Southampton, Eng., 101
 Stonington, Conn., 106
 Stratford, Conn., 110
 Trinity Churchyard, 109
 Churchyard Tombstones, 109
 Watertown, Mass., 92, 93, 96, 99, 100,
 101, 102, 103, 111
 Wear Lands, 96
 Westerly, R. I., 103, 104, 106, 107, 111,
 112
 Historical Society, 106
 Weston Church Records, 103
 Williams College, 111

DIX FAMILY

Adams, Thomas, 115
 Aldersey, Samuel, 115
 Avery, Hannah Anne Parke, 119
 Mary Ann Ogden, 119
 Samuel Putnam, 119

Barns, Deborah Dix, 118
 Richard, 118
 Bellingham, Richard, 115
 Browne, — Hodges, 118
 Abraham, 118

- Browne, John, 115
 Lydia, 118
 Mary Dix, 118
 Samuel, 115

 Conant, Roger, 115
 Craddock, Matthew, 115
 Craddock, Matthew, 115

 Dix, Abigail, 117, 118, 119
 Deborah, 118
 Edward, 113, 116, 117, 119
 Jane, 117
 Jane Wilkinson, 117, 118, 119
 John, 117, 118
 Mary, 118
 Rebecca, 118
 Susan, 117
 Susanna, 117
 Dudley, Thomas, 116

 Eaton, Theophilus, 115
 Endicott, John, 115

 Flagg, Mary, 118
 Rebecca Dix, 118
 Thomas, 118
 Foxcroft, George, 115

 Goffe, Thomas, 115
 Greene, Abigail, 119

 Harwood, George, 115
 Hodges, Andrew, 118
 Mrs., 118
 Humfrey, John, 115, 116
 Humphrey, John, 115
 Hutchins, Thomas, 115

 Johnson, Isaac, 115
 Keens, Susanna Maria, 119

 Miller, Elizabeth, 119
 Nowell, Increase, 115
 Ogden, Mary Ann, 119

 Park, Abigail Dix, 117, 118, 119
 Abigail Greene, 119
 Benjamin, 119
 Elizabeth Miller, 119
 Hannah Stanton York, 119
 John, 119
 Joseph, 119
 Thomas, 116, 118, 119
 Parke, Benjamin, 119
 Hannah Anne, 119
 Susanna Maria Keens, 119
 Parks, Thomas, 118
 Pery, Richard, 115
 Pinchion, William, 115

 Rice, Mary Dix Browne, 118
 Samuel, 118
 Rosewell, Henry, 115

 Saltonstall, Richard, 115, 116
 Southcott, Thomas, 115

 Vassall, Samuel, 115
 William, 115
 Ven, John, 115

 Whetcombe, Simon, 115
 Wilkinson, Jane, 117, 118, 119
 Wilson, John, 117
 Wincol, John, 117
 Winthrop, John, 115, 116
 Wright, Nathaniel, 115

 York, Hannah Stanton, 119
 Young, John, 115

NAMES OF PLACES, ETC.

- Atlantic Ocean, 115

 Boston, Mass., 113
 Brooklyn, N. Y., 119
 Bunker Hill, Mass., 119

 Cambridge, Mass., 118, 119
 Charles I., 115
 Charles River, 115
 Charlestown, R. I., 119
 Dix Pedigree, 119

 Dorchester Company, 116
 Dorchester, Mass., 116

 England, 115, 116, 119

 Gravesend, Eng., 117, 119
 Groton, 118

 Hartford, Conn., 119

 Ipswich, 118
 Isle of Wight, 117

Jersey City, N. J., 119
 London, Eng., 115
 Marlboro, Mass., 118
 Massachusetts Bay Company, 115, 116
 Merrimack River, 115
 Nantasket, 116
 New England, 116
 Historic Genealogical Society, 113
 Newton, Mass., 119
 New York City, N. Y., 119
 Pacific Ocean, 115
 Plymouth, Mass., 116
 Company, 115
 Salem, Mass., 115, 116, 117
 Ship, "Ambrose," 116, 117
 "Arabella," 116, 117
 "Jewell," 117
 "Lyvon," 116
 "Mary and John," 116
 "Talbot," 117
 Sudbury, Mass., 118
 Watertown, Mass., 113, 115, 117, 118,
 119
 Westerly, R. I., 119

WHITMAN FAMILY

Alcock, Anna, 130
 John, 130
 Sarah, 130, 131, 133, 135
 Avery, Ephraim, 135
 Hannah Platt, 135
 Hannah Anne Parke, 135
 John William, 135
 Mary Ann Ogden, 135
 Ruth, 135
 Samuel Putnam, 135
 Sarah Fairchild, 135
 Barrell, John, 128
 Benete, Edward, 127
 Biscoe, Martha Turner, 123
 Richard, 123
 Sarah, 123
 Bishop, James, 125
 Bracey, Mr., 125
 Biscoe, Nathaniel, 123
 Bryam, Elizabeth Whitman, 134
 Nathan, 134
 Bryan, Alexander, 124
 Byram, Abigail, 128
 Martha Shaw, 128
 Nicholas, 128
 Carmen, Damaris, 133, 134
 Carpenter, William, 127
 Chitty, Dorcas Green, 132
 Thomas, 132
 Clark, George, 125
 Margaret, 132
 Rev. Thomas, 132
 Clarke, George, 125
 Cocks, Mr., 132
 Sarah Whitman, 132
 Cooper, Elizabeth Whitman, 130
 Timothy, 130
 Daily, Mary, 130
 Damon, John, 132
 Margaret Clark, 132
 Davenport, Mr., 124
 Dyer, Thomas, 127
 Fairchild, Sarah, 135
 Farnam, Charles H., 121
 Fenn, Aaron, 134
 Benjamin, 124
 Frances Whitman, 134
 Fitch, Sarah, 133, 134, 135
 Fletcher, John, 125
 Ford, Andrew, 129
 Mary, 129
 Fowler, William, 124
 French, David, 129
 Gibbs, Jo., 123
 Glover, Mr., 124
 Goold, John, 131
 Sarah Whitman, 131
 Gould, Robert, 132
 Sarah Whitman Cocks, 132
 Graves, Mary, 132
 Green, Dorcas, 132
 Jacob, 132
 Hanford, Hannah, 134
 Harris, Walter, 127
 Hayward, William, 127
 Hobart, Nehemiah, 131
 Hogg, James, 129
 Hollis, Abigail, 129
 Horten, John Camden, 123
 Hues, William, 127
 Hull, Mr., 127
 Hunt, Ephraim, 128, 131
 Joanna Whitman, 131, 133

Hunt, John, 131
 Jacobs, Mary Whitman, 131, 133
 Nathaniel, 133
 Jenner, Mr., 127
 Thomas, 127
 Jones, Abraham, 128
 Sarah, 128
 Sarah Whitman, 128
 Thomas, 128
 Loring, Samuel, 131
 Mayer, Richard, 128
 Nash, James, 128
 Newman, Mr., 127
 Newton, Roger, 125
 Noyes, James, 131
 Ogden, Mary Ann, 135
 Parke, Hannah Anne, 135
 Perkins, Capt., 127
 Pierson, Rev. Mr. Abram, 131
 Plat, Richard, 126
 Platt, Hannah, 135
 Hannah Hanford, 134
 Hannah Whitman, 134, 135
 Joseph, 134, 135
 Prudden, Mr., 124
 Peter, 124
 Reed, Ruth, 129
 William, 129
 Richard, Benjamin, 130
 Roe, Hugh, 127
 Ruggles, Thomas, 131
 Russel, N., 131
 Samuel, 131
 Shaw, Martha, 128
 Stoddard, Esther Warham, 131
 Rev. Solomon, 131
 Sarah, 131
 Stoughton, Mr., 124
 Streame, John, 125
 Thomas, 127
 Tapp, Edmund, 124
 Taylor, Mr., 131
 Thomas, John, 129
 Thomas, Lydia, 130
 Thompson, Rev. Edward, 130
 Torrey, John, 130
 William, 127
 Treat, Robert, 125
 Turner, Eleanor, 130
 Martha, 123
 Warham, Esther, 131
 Welch, Sarah Whitman, 133, 134
 Thomas, 134
 Welsh, Thomas, 126
 Wheeler, Thomas, 126
 Whiteman, Zachariah, 124
 Whitman, Abiah, 129, 130
 Abigail Byram, 128
 Abigail Hollis, 129
 Charles, 133
 Damaris, 133, 134
 Damaris Carmen, 133, 134
 Dorcas Green Chitty, 132
 Elizabeth, 130, 132, 134
 Eunice, 133
 Frances, 134
 Hannah, 133, 134, 135
 Joanna, 131, 133
 John, 121, 123, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129,
 130, 131, 132, 133
 Margaret Clark, 132
 Mary, 131, 133
 Mary Ford, 129
 Mary Graves, 132
 Nicholas, 129
 Ruth, 126, 128, 130
 Ruth Reed, 129
 Samuel, 131, 132
 Sara, 123
 Sarah, 128, 131, 132, 133, 134
 Sarah Alcock, 130, 131, 133, 135
 Sarah Biscoe, 123
 Sarah Fitch, 133, 134, 135
 Sarah Stoddard, 131
 Thomas, 128, 129
 Zacha., 123
 Zachariah, 123, 124, 125, 126, 130
 Zacharie, 123
 Zachary, 125
 Zachariah, 129, 130, 131, 133, 134, 135
 Zechary, 129
 Williams, Damaris Whitman, 133, 134
 Mr., 134
 Withington, Henry, 124

NAMES OF PLACES, ETC.

- | | |
|---|--|
| Assobet, Mass., 132 | Mansfield, Mass., 129 |
| Boston, Mass., 123, 124, 126, 128, 130, 131, 132, 133 | Mastfield River, 129 |
| Braintray, 128 | Medford, Mass., 130 |
| Bridgewater, Mass., 128 | Milford Church, 124 |
| British Archives, 123 | Conn., 123, 124, 125, 130, 133, 134, 135 |
| Brooklyn, Conn., 135 | Nantascot, Mass., 132 |
| Bucks Co., Eng., 123 | Nantasket, Mass., 130 |
| Charlestown, Mass., 127, 132 | Narragansetts, 128 |
| Chesham, Eng., 123 | New England, 123 |
| Connecticut, 125 | New Haven Colony, 124 |
| Dorchester, Mass., 124 | Conn., 124, 125 |
| Records, 124 | New York, N. Y., 135 |
| Easton, Mass., 129 | Northampton, Mass., 131 |
| England, 123, 126, 128, 129, 135 | Norton, Mass., 129 |
| Exeter, Mass., 130 | Point Alderton, 130 |
| Farmington, Conn., 131, 132 | Roxbury, Mass., 130 |
| General Assembly, 131 | Rye, N. Y., 135 |
| General Court, 125, 128, 131 | Salem, Mass., 131 |
| Gloucester, Mass., 130 | Sautucket River, 129 |
| Grape Island, 127 | Second Church, Boston, Mass., 132 |
| Harrison's Raigne, 127 | Ship, "Confidence," 126 |
| Hartford, Conn., 135 | "Truelove," 123 |
| Herts, Eng., 123 | Stowe, Mass., 130, 132, 133 |
| Hingham, Mass., 127, 128 | Stratford, Conn., 135 |
| Hull, Mass., 128, 130, 131, 132, 133, 135 | Taunton, Mass., 129 |
| Indians, 124, 128, 129 | Weymouth, Mass., 121, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 135 |
| Jersey City, N. J., 135 | River, 127 |
| Lancaster, Mass., 131 | Whitman's Neck, 129 |
| London, Eng., 123 | Whitman Pedigree, 135 |
| | Winthrop's Journal, 126 |
| | Yale College, 132 |

FAIRCHILD FAMILY

- | | |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Adams, Mary Fairfield, 146 | Avery, Sarah Coit, 148 |
| Samuel, 146 | Sarah Elizabeth, 148 |
| Avery, Elisha Lothrop, 148 | Sarah Fairchild, 148, 149 |
| Hannah Anne Parke, 148, 149 | Beach, Benjamin, 145 |
| Hannah Platt, 148 | Hannah, 145 |
| Jane Gunning, 148 | Hannah Staples, 146 |
| John William, 148, 149 | John, 145, 146 |
| Mary Ann Ogden, 149 | Mary Wheeler Fairchild, 145 |
| Rev. Ephraim, 148 | Richard, 145 |
| Samuel Putnam, 148, 149 | |

Beach, Ruth, 146, 149
 Birdsey, John, 144
 Blakeman, Dorothy Smith, 145
 Ebenezer, 145
 Elizabeth, 145
 Mr., 142
 Burch, —, 147
 Ruth, 147, 148, 149
 Burritt, Elizabeth, 145
 Hannah Beach Fairchild, 145
 John, 145
 William, 141, 145
 Burwell, Dinah, 146

Coit, Sarah, 148
 Cragg, Katherine, 143, 144
 Craigg, Katharine, 142
 Curtiss, —, 146
 John, 144, 146
 Mary, 146, 147, 149
 Wm., 144

Davenport, Mr., 139
 Dupignac, Ebenezer R., 148
 Sarah Elizabeth Avery, 148

Earl of Warwick, 139

Fairchild, —, Seabrook, 142, 144, 145,
 149
 Abel, 147
 Abigail, 146
 Abigail Patterson, 147
 Anna, 146
 Benjamin, 146
 Curtiss, 147
 Dinah, 145
 Dinah Burwell, 146
 Edward, 145
 Elizabeth Blakeman, 145
 Emma, 145
 Ephraim, 146
 Eunice, 146
 Hannah Beach, 145
 John, 144
 John Curtiss, 147, 148, 149
 Jonathan, 145
 Joseph, 147
 Jno. Curtiss, 147
 Katharine Craigg, 142
 Katherine Cragg, 143, 144
 Mary, 146
 Mary Curtiss, 146, 147, 149
 Mary Wheeler, 145, 146, 149
 Nabby Patterson, 147
 Reuben, 148
 Robert, 145, 147
 Ruth, 148

Fairchild, Ruth Beach, 146, 149
 Ruth Burch, 147, 148, 149
 Samuel, 144, 145, 146, 147, 149
 Sarah, 144, 145, 147, 148, 149
 Tabitha, 148
 Thomas, 137, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145,
 149
 William, 147
 Zechariah, 145
 Fayrchild, Thomas, 141
 ffairchild, Thomas, 143

Groves, Philip, 140, 142
 Gunning, Jane, 148

Hawley, Miriam, 145

Judson, Jerem., 144
 William, 141

King Charles I., 139
 King James I., 139

Medley, Wm., 144

Ogden, Mary Ann, 149

Parke, Hannah Anne, 148, 149
 Patterson, Abigail, 147
 Esther Rowland, 147
 Nabby, 147
 Samuel, 147
 Platt, Hannah, 148
 Preston, Emma Fairchild, 145
 Hackaliah, 145
 Jehiel, 144
 Mary, 144
 Sarah Fairchild, 144
 William, 142, 144
 Pruden, Mr., 139

Robinson, Mr., 139
 Rowland, Esther, 147

Seabrook, —, 142, 144, 145, 149
 Robert, 142, 144
 Sherwood, Thomas, 141, 142
 Smith, Dorothy, 145
 Staples, Hannah, 146

Wheeler, Mary, 145, 146, 149
 Miriam Hawley, 145
 Moses, 141, 145
 Thomas, 142
 Whiting, Elizabeth, 142, 143
 Samuel, 147
 Winthrop, John, 139, 144
 Winthrope, John, 143

NAMES OF PLACES, ETC.

- America, 130, 140, 143
 Arundel, Earl of, 140
- Bridgeport, Conn., 137, 139
 Brooklyn, N. Y., 149
 Buckingham, Marquis of, 140
- Congregational Society, Stratford, 147
 Connecticut, 139
 Patent, 140
 Cupheag, Conn., 139
- Devon County, Eng., 140
 Dorchester, Mass., 144
- England, 140, 142, 143, 149
 Episcopal Church, Stratford, 147
- Fairfield, Conn., 140, 146, 149
 County, Conn., 139, 142
 County Historical Society, 137
 Pedigree, 149
 Fresh Pond, Conn., 141
- General Court, Conn., 140, 142, 144
 Giggleswick, Eng., 144
 Great Neck, 141
- Hamilton, Marquis of, 140
 Hartford, Conn., 139, 142, 143, 149
 Housatonic River, Conn., 139, 141
 Huntington, Conn., 139
- Lake Champlain, N. Y., 147
 Lenox, Duke of, 140
 Litchfield, Conn., 146
 Little Neck, Conn., 141
 London, Eng., 139, 142, 144
 Long Island Sound, 139
- Milford, Conn., 139, 142
 Monroe, Conn., 139
- Narragansett, 139
 New England, 139, 140, 142, 143
 New Haven, Conn., 139, 142, 144
 Newtown, Conn., 145
 New York, N. Y., 139, 148, 149
 North Stratford, Conn., 147
- Patent, The, 139, 140
 Plymouth, Eng., 140
 Company, 140
 Company of England, 139
- Ripton, Conn., 147
 Rye, N. Y., 148, 149
- Saybrook, Conn., 139
 Ship, "Truelove," 144
 Stratford, Conn., 137, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149
- Ticonderoga, N. Y., 147
 Trumbull, Conn., 139, 147
- Virginia, 139
- Warwick, Earl of, 140
 West Haven, Conn., 146
 Weston, Conn., 146, 147
 West Riding, Eng., 144
 Wethersfield, Conn., 139, 142
 Windsor, Conn., 139
 Woodbury, Conn., 145
- York County, Eng., 144

PLATT FAMILY

- Andrus, Gov., 157
 Atkinson, Luke, 156
 Mary Platt, 156
 Avery, Ephraim, 161, 162
 Hannah Anne Parke, 162
 Hannah Platt, 161, 162
 Mary Ann Ogden, 162
 Samuel Putnam, 162
- Beach, Sarah Platt, 157
 Thomas, 157
 Benedict, John, 159
- Benedict, Mary Platt, 159
 Mr., 159
 Rebecca, 159
 Samuel, 159
 Betts, Thomas, 159
- Camfield, Sarah, 158
 Clark, George, 158
 Hannah, 158, 159, 160, 162
 Comstock, Christopher, 158
 Hannah Platt, 158

Dickinson, Rev. Mr., 160

Eaton, Theophilus, 157

Ferris, Jeffrey, 159
Susanna Lockwood, 159

Finch, Gabriel, 158

Fitch, Ann Hanford, 158

Deborah Hanford, 158

Elizabeth Platt, 161

Esther Platt, 161

Gov., 161

Josiah Hanford, 158

Samuel, 161

Susannah, 161

Timothy, 161

Green, John, 157

Hamet, Jonathan, 157

Hanford, Ann, 158

Charlotte St. John, 161

Daniel, 161

Deborah, 158

Hannah, 160, 161, 162

Jedediah, 158, 161

Jonathan, 158

Joseph Platt, 161

Mary Platt, 158, 161

Rev. Thomas, 160, 161

Susannah Platt, 161

Hayes, Samuel, 159

Hooker, Rev. Thomas, 161

William, 161

Kellogg, Mary, 158

Samuel, 159

Sarah Platt, 159

Lockwood, Ephraim, 159

Mercie St. John, 159

Robert, 159

Sarah, 159

Susanna, 159

Lupton, Thomas, 158

Marvin, Elizabeth, 160

Hannah, 161

Hannah Platt, 159

Matthew, 159, 160

Miles, 159

Mr., 159

Sarah, 159

Merwin, Miles, 157

Sarah Platt Beach, 157

Nicoll, Gov., 157

Ogden, Mary Ann, 162

Parke, Hannah Anne, 162

Platt, Ann, 161

Elizabeth, 160, 161

Elizabeth Marvin, 160

Elizabeth Wood, 156

Epenetus, 155, 156, 157, 158

Esther, 161

Hannah, 155, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162

Hannah Clark, 158, 159, 160, 162

Hannah Hanford, 160, 161, 162

Hannah Whitman, 161, 162

Isaac, 155, 156, 157

John, 155, 156, 158, 159, 160, 162

Joseph, 155, 156, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162

Josiah, 155, 156, 158, 159

Mary, 155, 156, 158, 159, 161, 162

Mary Kellogg, 158

Phebe Smith, 156

Phebe Wood, 157

Rebecca Benedict, 159

Richard, 151, 155, 156, 158, 162

Samuel, 159

Sarah, 155, 157, 159

Sarah Camfield, 158

Sarah Lockwood, 159

Susannah, 161

Prudden, Peter, 156

Pruden, Peter, 155

Rogers, Wm., 156

Skidmore, Thomas, 158

Smith, Phebe, 156

St. John, Charlotte, 161

Hannah Marvin, 161

Mercie, 159

Mrs. Joseph, 161

William, 161

Thatcher, Ann Platt, 161

Stephen, 161

Wetmore, Mary Platt Atkinson, 156

Thomas, 156

Whitman, Hannah, 161, 162

Zachariah, 161

Wilkes, Thomas, 156

Wood, Elizabeth, 156

Jonas, 156, 157

Phebe, 157

NAMES OF PLACES, ETC.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>America, 153, 155
 Authorities Cited, 153</p> <p>Brooklyn, Conn., 162
 Brooklyn, N. Y., 162</p> <p>Connecticut, 157
 Colony, 161
 Cow Harbor Brooke, 156</p> <p>Danbury, Conn., 159</p> <p>Easter Purchase, 156
 Eaton's Neck, 157
 Elm City, 155
 England, 155, 156, 157, 158, 162</p> <p>Fairfield, Conn., 159</p> <p>General Court, Mass., 159
 Greenwich, Conn., 159</p> <p>Halifax, Eng., 156
 Hartford, Conn., 157, 162
 Hempstead, L. I., N. Y., 156
 Hertfordshire Quarter, 155
 Huntington, L. I., N. Y., 153, 156, 157</p> | <p>Jersey City, N. J., 162</p> <p>King Philip's War, 160</p> <p>Long Island, 156, 157</p> <p>Mary Island, 157
 Milford, Conn., 155, 156, 157, 158, 160,
 161, 162</p> <p>New England, 153, 160
 New Haven Colony, 157
 New Haven, Conn., 151, 155, 156, 162
 New York, N. Y., 157, 162
 Norwalk, Conn., 153, 156, 158, 159,
 160, 161, 162</p> <p>Platt Pedigree, 162</p> <p>Rye, N. Y., 153, 162</p> <p>Southampton, L. I., N. Y., 156
 Stamford, Conn., 159</p> <p>Watertown, Mass., 159</p> <p>Yale College, 157</p> |
|---|---|

WHEELER FAMILY

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>Avery, Hannah Anne Parke, 170
 John William, 170
 Mary Ann Ogden, 170
 Samuel Putnam, 170
 Sarah Fairchild, 170</p> <p>Beach, Ruth, 170</p> <p>Birdsey, Catharine, 168</p> <p>Blackleach, Elizabeth Harris Wheeler
 Nesbitt Poisson, 169
 Richard, 169</p> <p>Blakeman, Bathsheba Pierson, 169
 Elizabeth Wheeler, 168
 James, 169
 Jane, 168
 Miriam Wheeler, 169
 Rev. Adam, 168
 Samuel, 168</p> <p>Brook, Mr., 168</p> <p>Burch, Ruth, 170</p> <p>Chauncey, Israel, 168</p> <p>Curtis, John, 167</p> | <p>Curtiss, Mary, 170</p> <p>Fairchild, ——— Seabrook, 169
 John Curtiss, 170
 Mary Curtiss, 170
 Mary Wheeler, 169, 170
 Ruth Beach, 170
 Ruth Burch, 170
 Sarah, 170
 Samuel, 167, 169, 170
 Thomas, 169</p> <p>Groves, Ann Hawley, 168
 Philip, 168</p> <p>Harris, Elizabeth, 169
 Gabriel, 169</p> <p>Hawley, Ann, 168
 Catharine Birdsey, 168
 Joseph, 167, 168
 Miniam, 168, 169, 170</p> <p>Jones, Mr., 166</p> |
|---|---|

Ludlow, Roger, 165
 Nesbitt, Elizabeth Harris Wheeler, 169
 Hugh, 169
 Nichols, Anne Ward, 169
 Caleb, 169
 Sarah, 169
 Ogden, Mary Ann, 170
 Parke, Hannah Anne, 170
 Pierson, Bathsheba, 169
 Stephen, 169
 Poisson, Edward De La Ponte, 169
 Elizabeth Harris Wheeler Nesbitt, 169
 Seabrook, —, 169
 Stowe, Mr., 166
 Swan, Rev. B. L., 168
 Walker, Elizabeth Wheeler Blakeman, 168
 Jacob, 168
 Mercy, 168
 Ward, Anne, 169
 Wheeler, Elizabeth, 168
 Elizabeth Harris, 169
 Joanna, 169
 Mary, 168, 169, 170
 Miriam, 168, 169
 Miriam Hawley, 168, 169, 170
 Moses, 163, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170
 Samuel, 167, 168, 169
 Sarah Nichols, 169
 Wooster, Abraham, 168
 David, 169
 Mercy Walker, 168

NAMES OF PLACES, ETC.

Boston, Mass., 168
 Bridgeport, Conn., 163, 168
 Brooklyn, N. Y., 170
 Colonial Land Records, 166
 Colony of Hartford, Conn., 166
 Danbury, Conn., 169
 Derby, Conn., 168, 169
 England, 165, 168, 170
 Fairfield, Conn., 169, 170
 County Historical Society, 163
 Court, 165
 General Court, Connecticut, 165, 167
 Hartford, Conn., 166, 170
 Indians, 167, 168
 Kent County, England, 165
 London, Eng., 165
 New Haven Company, 165
 Conn., 163, 165, 168, 169, 170
 New London, Conn., 169
 New York, N. Y., 170
 Revolutionary War, 169
 Rye, N. Y., 170
 Staffordshire, Eng., 168
 Stratford, Conn., 163, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170
 Ferry, Conn., 167
 Wheeler Pedigree, 170

LANE FAMILY

Ardell, William, 186
 Ardells, Mary, 186
 Atkinson, Theodore, 179
 Austin, Thomas, 183
 Avery, Deborah Lothrop, 193
 Elizabeth Lane, 192, 193
 Elizabeth White, 191
 Ephraim, 193
 Hannah Platt, 193
 Hannah Anne Parke, 193
 Avery, John, 193
 John William, 193
 Margaret, 191, 192
 Mary Lane, 191
 Mary Ann Ogden, 193
 Mehitable Hinckley Worden, 191
 Robert, 191, 192, 193
 Ruth Little, 193
 Samuel Putnam, 193
 Sarah Fairchild, 193

Avery, William, 191, 192

Baker, Matthew, 176

William, 176

Bevens, Rowland, 183

Boyce, —, 190

Sarah, 190, 193

Boyse, Thomas, 183

Brakenbury, William, 177, 178

Butterfield, Thomas, 183

Chamberlain, John, 188

Chauncy, Charles, 185

Clark, Thomas, 186

Coggan, John, 185

Martha, 185

Converse, James, 190

Coytmore, Thomas, 183, 185

Dickenson, John, 176, 185

Dickinson, John, 186

Dudley, Thomas, 179, 180, 181

Every, Elizabeth, 188

Mary, 187, 188

Sarah, 188

William, 188

Fairchild, Sarah, 193

Farley, George, 184

Fich, Samuel, 187

Fitch, Benjamin, 191

Joseph, 191

Mary, 191

Rebecca Merriam, 191

Samuel, 191

Sarah Lane, 191

Zachariah, 191

Foster, Annah, 188

Fox, Judith Reyner, 186

Rev. Jabez, 186

Gould, Jeremiah, 176

Green, J., 185

John, 189

Thomas, 177

W., 184

Greenland, John, 189, 190

Harvard, John, 185

Harwood, John, 176, 184

Hills, Greshom, 178

John, 184

Joseph, 178

Hinckley, Mehitable, 191

Thomas, 191

Hooper, Christian, 179

Howell, Thomas, 175

Lain or Laine, Anna Reyner, 183

Annah, 187

Doroty, 188

Dority, 188

Jemima, 187

Job, 183, 184, 186, 189

Job J. L., 186

John, 187, 189

Sarah, 187

Lane, Anna Reyner, 190

Edward, 176

Elizabeth, 191, 192, 193

George, 176

Hannah Reyner, 190

James, 176, 179, 185

Job, 171, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 181,

182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 189, 190,

193

Jobe, 183

John, 176, 179, 185, 190

Mary, 191

Rebekah, 191

Sarah, 190

Sarah Boyce, 190, 193

Leverett, John, 183

Linds, John, 189

Little, Ruth, 193

Lothrop, Deborah, 193

Lynde, John, 189

Lynden, Mary, 184

Matthewes, William, 189

Merriam, Rebecca, 191

Mudg, John, 189

Mumings, George, 177

Ogden, Mary Ann, 193

Parke, Hannah Anne, 193

Parker, John, 181

Nicholas, 177

Phpps, Samll, 189

Platt, Hannah, 193

Quinne, John, 183

Rayner, Jachin, 184

Reyner, — Boyce, 190

Anna, 183, 190

Hannah, 190

Jachin, 183

Judith, 186

Marmaduke, 176

Rev. John, 184, 190

Reynor, Jachin, 184

Robinson, Thomas, 179

Rock, Joseph, 183

Russell, Ja., 189

James, 189

Smith, Michael, 179
 Mr., 176
 Sprague, Dorothy Winthrop, 186
 Edward, 186
 J., 177
 John, 178
 Samuel, 189
 Stuke, Robert, 185
 Thompson, Frances, 186
 Torrey, William, 179
 Wait, Samuel, 188
 Waite, Tho^s, 189

Wayte, Joh., 178
 John, 177
 Whipple, Matthew, 187
 White, Elizabeth, 191
 Whiting, Mr., 184
 Whitmore, W. H., 173
 William H., 176
 Wilkins, William, 177
 Winthrop, Dorothy, 186
 Fitz J., 182
 Fitz John, 181, 182
 John, 179, 180, 185
 Worden, Mehitable Hinckley, 191
 Samuel, 191

NAMES OF PLACES, ETC.

America, 193
 Authorities Cited, 173
 Barkham, Eng., 181, 192, 193
 Bedford, Mass., 176, 179, 182
 Billerica, Mass., 171, 173, 179, 181, 182,
 184, 185, 187, 189, 190, 193
 Records, 184
 River, 183
 Boston, Mass., 173, 179, 180, 183, 184,
 186, 192
 Bristol, Eng., 185
 Brooklyn, Conn., 193
 Brooklyn, N. Y., 193
 Bucks County, Eng., 177
 Cambridge, Mass., 179, 185
 Casco Bay, 185
 Charlestown, Mass., 179, 186, 189
 Chesham, Eng., 177
 Colonial General Court, 180
 Concord, Mass., 180, 182, 184
 River, 179, 180, 181
 Connecticut, 181
 Cork, Ireland, 183
 Dedham, Mass., 191, 192, 193
 Dorchester, Mass., 175, 190, 191, 192,
 193
 Dover, N. H., 184
 Edgeton, Eng., 183
 England, 175, 179, 181, 184, 185, 186,
 187, 190, 193
 France, 181
 General Court, Mass., 180, 184
 Gildersome, Eng., 176, 190
 Great Bridge, 183

Hartford, Conn., 193
 Harvard College, 185
 Hall, 185
 Hertfordshire, Eng., 175
 Highlands, N. Y., 193
 Indians, 184
 Ipswich, Mass., 180
 Ireland, 181
 Jersey City, N. J., 193
 King Philip's War, 184
 Lane Pedigree, 193
 London, Eng., 175, 176
 Malden, Mass., 171, 173, 175, 177, 178,
 179, 181, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187,
 188, 189, 190, 191
 Marshfield, Mass., 175, 193
 Massachusetts, 180
 Bay, 189
 Bay Colony Records, 175
 Bay Company, 179
 Records, 176, 185
 Middlesex County, Mass., 173, 181, 183,
 186, 189
 New England, 181, 183, 189, 190
 New London, Conn., 181
 Newtowne, 179, 180, 185
 New York, N. Y., 193
 Norwich, Conn., 193
 Ilymouth, Mass., 190
 Reading, Mass., 191
 Rehoboth, Mass., 175
 Rickmansworth, Eng., 175

Rowley, Mass., 183
 Rye, N. Y., 193
 Salem, Mass., 179
 Saybrook, Conn., 181
 Scituate, Mass., 179
 Scotland, 181
 Sekonk, Mass., 175, 190, 193
 Ship "Desire," 183
 Stratford, Conn., 193
 Suffolk Co., Mass., 183

Truro, Mass., 193

Wakefield, Mass., 191
 Welburne, Eng., 183
 Winthrop Farm, 182
 Winthrop-Lane Farm, 184
 Winthrop Purchase, 182
 Woburn, Mass., 186

Yorkshire, Eng., 176, 183, 187, 190

AVERY FAMILY

Achincloss, Mary Roach Fillis, 228
 Adams, William, 221
 Albri, Thomas, 214
 Alleyn, Edward, 210
 Allright, Jone, 214
 Margaret, 201, 214, 215, 216, 223, 240
 William, 214
 Arden, Agnes, 200
 Robert, 200
 Ascot, Margery, 201
 Austen, John, 202
 Austin, Francis, 218
 Avery, Abigail, 224, 226
 Allen, 203
 Andrew, 205
 Ann, 227
 Anna Cushman, 226
 Annah, 203
 Barsheba, 203
 Benjamin, 203
 Benjamin Parke, 232
 Catharine, 203
 Christian, 203
 Charles Russell, 234
 Deborah, 228
 Deborah Lothrop, 227, 229, 240
 Deborah Putnam, 230
 Dorothy, 217, 218
 Dudley, 200, 203
 Ebenezer, 218
 Elisha, 228
 Elisha Lothrop, 230, 231
 Elizabeth, 200, 201, 224, 226, 228
 Elizabeth Draper, 230
 Elizabeth Lane, 223, 224, 240
 Elizabeth White, 217
 Ellen Walters, 237
 Emma Parke, 237
 Ephraim, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229,
 230, 240
 Eunice Putnam, 228
 Fanny Falconer, 236

Avery, Frances, 199, 204, 205, 240
 Giles, 203
 Grace, 213
 Hannah, 218
 Hannah Platt, 230, 240
 Hannah Anne Parke, 231, 234, 240
 Hannah Stanton, 231, 232
 Henry, 200
 Henry Ogden, 235, 236, 237
 Hester, 203
 Isoult Barry, 201
 Jacob, 199, 203
 Jane, 203, 226
 Jane Gunning, 231
 Jerusha, 213
 Joane, 199, 203, 204, 205
 Joanna, 204, 240
 Job, 225, 226
 Johan, 201
 Johane, 201
 John, 200, 201, 203, 223, 224, 225, 226,
 227, 228, 240
 John William, 230, 231, 240
 Jonathan, 217, 219, 224
 Joseph, 203, 223
 Joseph Platt, 230
 Katharine, 203
 Lucy Devotion, 228
 Lydia Healy, 224
 Margaret Allright, 201, 214, 215, 216,
 223, 240
 Margarett, 214
 Margery Ascot, 201
 Maria Woodmansey Tappin, 215, 216,
 220
 Mary, 216, 221, 226
 Mary Ann Fuller, 232
 Mary Ann Ogden, 234, 236, 240
 Mary Cushing, 225
 Mary Deming, 225
 Mary Henrietta, 236
 Mary Lane, 216

- Avery, Mary Rebecca Halsey, 233
 Mary Roach Fillis Achincloss, 228
 Mary Rotch, 225
 Mary Woodmansey Tappin, 215, 216, 220
 Mehitable Hinckley Worden, 217
 Michael, 200, 201
 Mirabella, 203
 Polly Cushing, 228
 Prudence, 199, 203
 Rachel, 218, 221, 224
 Rev. Ephraim, 227, 230
 Rev. John, 227, 228
 Rev. Joseph, 223
 Richard, 199, 200, 202, 203, 240
 Robert, 199, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 214, 216, 217, 221, 223, 224, 225, 240
 Robert S., 201
 Robt., 205
 Ruth, 225, 228
 Ruth Knowles, 225
 Ruth Little, 224, 225, 227, 240
 Ruth Smith, 227
 Samuel, 200, 203, 228
 Samuel Putnam, 197, 212, 213, 231, 234, 235, 236, 239, 240
 Sarah, 203
 Sarah Cort, 231
 Sarah Elizabeth, 231
 Sarah Fairchild, 230, 231, 240
 Septimus, 227, 228
 Stephen, 232
 Susan Jane, 232
 Susan Jane Avery, 232
 Sybil, 217, 218
 Sybil Sparhawk, 217
 Thomas, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 240
 Thomasine, 201
 W. T., 201, 204
 Willi, 220
 William, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 207, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 240
 Wm., 214, 217
 Aveye, Origo Williams, 201
 Richard, 200
 Walter, 201
- Bacon, Edward M., 212
 Baker, Deborah Avery, 228
 Joseph, 228
 Prudence, 228
 Samuel, 228
 Barker, Dr., 229
 Barritt, Hannah Platt Avery, 230
 Stephen, 230
 Barry, Isoult, 201
- Barry, John, 201
 Battelle, Thomas, 219
 Bearstoe, William, 218
 Biddle, William, 214
 Bingham, Jerusha Avery, 213
 Lucy Avery, 213
 Boulders, Ann, 205
 Giles, 205
 Boyce, Sarah, 216, 223
 Brant, James, 214
 Brett, William, 216
 Brewster, John, 228, 229
 Mary Durkee, 229
 Patience, 225
 Peleg, 228
 Ruth Avery, 228
 Sarah Smith, 228
 William, 225
 Brown, Isaac, 230
 Bullard, Ann, 224
 Elizabeth Avery, 224
 Isaac, 224
 William, 218, 224
 Burch, Ruth, 230
- Champion, John, 199, 202
 Prudence Avery, 199, 203
 Thomas, 205
 Chickering, Francis, 219
 Chickeryes, Henry, 219
 Church, Elizabeth Draper Avery, 230
 Mr., 230
 Clement, Elizabeth, 218
 Cleveland, Joseph, 229
 Cobb, Henry, 229
 Coit, David, 231
 Sarah, 231
 Colden, Cadwallader, 230
 Collier, Charles, 234
 Elinor, 234
 Collins, Mary, 225
 Conant, Edward Davis, 223
 Conklin, Katharine, 234
 Cornell, Charles Russell, 231, 232
 Gideon, 231
 Hannah Russell, 231
 Hannah Stanton Avery, 231, 232
 Latham, 232
 Louisa Bailey White, 232
 Maria, 232
 Maria Cornell, 232
 Crow, Deborah, 227
 Cushing, Deborah Fletcher, 225
 Mary, 225
 Polly, 228
 Thomas, 225
 Cushman, Anna, 226
 Josiah, 226

Cushman, Susanna, 226

Deane, W. R., 217

Deming, Mary, 225

Devotion, Lucy, 228

Rev. Ebenezer, 228

Digby, Lord, 203

Draper, Elizabeth Avery, 226

James, 226

John, 226

Dummer, Joseph, 222

Dupignac, Ebenezer R., 231

Sarah Elizabeth Avery, 231

Durkee, Abigail Hovey, 229

Mary, 229

William, 229

Dwight, Anna Flint, 224

Hannah, 224

John, 224

Michael, 224

Rachel Avery, 224

Timothy, 219, 224

Dyer, Benjamin, 218, 221

Hannah Avery, 218

Ellis, Edward, 214

Margaret, 214

Mary, 214

William, 214

Fairchild, John Curtis, 230

Ruth Burch, 230

Sarah, 230, 231, 240

Fayerbanke, John, 218

Fearrin, Samuel, 222

Ffayerbank, Ffayerbanks, Jonathan, 218,
219

Ffisher, Cornelius, 219

Daniell, 220

Ffoster, Thomas, 220

Fillis, Mary Roach, 228

Fisher, Daniel, 215

Fitch, Benjamin, 224

Fletcher, Deborah, 225

Flint, Anna, 224

Foster, John, 215

Freeman, John, 225

Mercy, 225

Mercy Prence, 225

Fuller, Jane Quinby, 232

Joseph Kirby, 232

Mary Ann, 232

Fulwood, Avery, 200

John, 200

Gardiner, Deborah Lothrop Avery, 227

Lion, 197

Garys, Arthur, 220

Graves, Sybil Avery, 217, 218

Thomas, 217

Grosvenor, Eunice Putnam Avery, 228

Lemuel, 228

Gunning, Jane, 231

Hall, Rebecca, 228

Hammond, Thomas, 217

Harberfild, William, 222

Healy, Lydia, 224

Nathaniel, 224

Rebecca, 224

Herring, Thomas, 218

Hibbert, Robert, 203

Higgs, John, 222

Hinchman, Dr., 230

Hinckley, Mary Richards, 217

Mehitable, 217

Thomas, 217

Hovey, Abigail, 229

Howland, Grace Avery, 213

Irelande, Roger, 205

Jackson, Hannah, 225

Keens, Susanna Maria, 231

King, Grace Avery, 213

Lucy Avery Bingham, 213

Knowles, Mercy Freeman, 225

Ruth, 225

Samuel, 225

Kolb, —, 236

George, 236

Kathryn, 236

Lane, Elizabeth, 223, 224, 240

Job, 216, 223

Mary, 216

Samuel, 222

Sarah Boyce, 216, 223

Lee, Abigail, 236

Little, Ephraim, 224

John, 226

Mary Sturtevant, 224

Ruth, 224, 225, 227, 240

Lothrop, Abigail Avery, 226

Deborah, 227, 229, 240

Deborah Crow, 227

Elisha, 226, 227

Ezra, 227

Samuel, 227

Mileham, John, 214

Mathew, 214

Moore, Thomas, 214

Newman, Patience, 217

Rev. Samuel, 217

- Norris, Samuel, 214
Norwell, Samll, 220
- Ogden, Henry Aaron, 234
Katharine Conklin, 234
Mary Ann, 234, 236, 240
- Parke, Benjamin, 231
Hannah Anne, 237, 240
Susanna Maria K. ens, 231
- Parker, Daniel, 226
Rev. Jonathan, 225
Ruth Avery, 225
- Peper, Robert, 220
- Platt, Hannah, 227, 229, 230, 240
Hannah Whitman, 230
Joseph, 230
Zophar, 227
- Prence, Mercy, 225
Patience Brewster, 225
Thomas, 225
- Price, Ruth, 225
- Putnam, Aaron, 228
Deborah Lothrop Avery Gardiner, 227
Eben, 228
Elizabeth Avery, 228
Eunice, 228
Israel, 197, 228
Rebecca Hall, 228
Rev. Aaron, 228
- Quinby, Jane, 232
- Raymond, Henry J., 233
- Richards, Abigail Avery, 224
John, 224
Judeth, 224
Mary, 217
- Roberts, Arthur, 216
- Rorch, Mary, 225
- Rowe, Thomas, 203
- Russell, Hannah, 231
- Seaver, Robert, 220
- Shakespeare, Mary, 200
William, 200
- Sharpe, William, 213
- Simmons, James R., 211
- Smith, Brewster, 228
Jehiel, 227
Kesia Wood, 227
Kesiah, 227
Ruth, 227
- Sparhawk, Esther, 217
Katharine, 217
Mary, 217
Nathaniel, 217
Patience Newman, 217
Sybil, 217
- Steele, Grace Avery King, 213
- Stofford, Margaret, 201
Thomas, 201
- Sturtevant, Mary, 224
- Sumner, Elizabeth Clement, 218
Hannah, 218
Rachel Avery, 218
William, 218, 221
- Talmage, Catherine Van Nest, 233
David T., 233
Elinor Collier, 234
Mary Rebecca Halsey Avery, 233
Susan C. Whittemore, 233, 234
Thomas De Witt, 233, 234
- Tappin, John, 215, 216
Joseph, 215
Maria Woodmansey, 215, 216, 220
Mary Woodmansey, 215, 216, 220
- Tisdale, James, 216
John, 216
Mary Avery, 216, 221
- Upham, Caleb, 226
- Van Nest, Catherine, 233
- Vyse, Thos., 203
- Ward, Robert, 218
- Warren, Richard, 224
- Welcher, Abigail Lee, 236
Alice Lee, 236
Avery Ogden, 236
Emma Parke Avery, 236
Fanny Falconer Avery, 236
John Philester, 236
Kathryn Kolb, 236
Lester Groome, 236
Manfred Philester, 236
- West, Mary Avery, 226
Mr., 226
- White, Elizabeth, 217
Louisa Bailey, 232
Salome Elizabeth, 223
- Whiting, James, 223
- Whitman, Hannah, 230
- Whittemore, —, 234
Charles, 234
Susan C., 233, 234
- Wigglesworth, Rev. Michael, 217
- Sybil Sparhawk Avery, 217
- Wight, John, 224
- Williams, Origo, 201
- Wilson, John, 222
- Windgate, Richard, 204
- Winthrop, Gov., 209
- Wood, Kesia, 227

Woodmansey, James, 222
 Jno., 220
 Maria, 215, 216, 220
 Mary, 215, 216, 220

Woodmansey, Robert, 216
 Worden, Mehitable Hinckley, 217
 Samuel, 217
 Wright, Alice, 214

NAMES OF PLACES, ETC.

Alleghany, Pa., 234
 America, 197, 213, 215, 223, 224
 Arberfeld, Eng., 214
 Arborfield, Eng., 214
 Archaeological Institute of America, 237
 Architectural League, 236
 Arton, Eng., 200
 Authorities Cited, 197, 198
 Avery Lane, 200
 Pedigree, 239
 Street, 200
 Axbridge, Eng., 199

Barkham, Eng., 201, 205, 214, 216, 217,
 223, 240
 Bath, Eng., 201
 Bedford, N. Y., 230
 Belleville, N. J., 231, 234
 Bellingham, Mass., 211
 Berks Co., Eng., 204, 214
 Berkshire Co., Eng., 201, 203, 204, 214,
 216, 223, 240
 Bicester, Eng., 218
 Birmingham, Eng., 200
 Blue Anchor, Mass., 215
 Bodmin, Eng., 200, 201
 Boston Common, 212
 Boston, Mass., 197, 209, 212, 215, 216,
 218, 220, 222, 224, 225, 226, 228, 240
 Bound Brook, N. J., 233
 Bridgeport, Conn., 197
 Brooklyn, Conn., 227, 228, 229, 240
 Brooklyn, N. Y., 223, 231, 234, 236, 237,
 240

California, 232
 Cambridge, Mass., 215, 217, 229
 Cape Cod, Mass., 197, 198
 Charlestown, Mass., 217
 Cherry Valley, N. Y., 228
 Columbia University, N. Y., 234
 Concord, Mass., 209
 Congresburie, Eng., 199, 202, 203, 240
 Congresbury, Eng., 199
 Contentment, Mass., 209
 Conway, Mass., 212
 Cornwall, Eng., 200

Dedham Church, Mass., 215
 Church Records, 214

Dedham Historical Records, 210
 Historical Society, 211, 212, 213, 223
 Mass., 197, 198, 199, 201, 203, 207,
 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215,
 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223,
 224, 240
 Proprietors, 210
 Records, 215, 219
 Village, Mass., 211
 Deerfield, Mass., 214
 Devonshire, Eng., 200, 201
 Diocese of Doctors' Commons, 240
 Dorchester, Mass., 218, 222, 223, 240
 Dover, Mass., 211
 Dowland, Eng., 201
 Duxbury, Mass., 216

Eastham, Mass., 225
 East Hampstead, Eng., 205
 Easton, N. Y., 231
 Ecole des Beaux Arts, 237
 Enfield, Eng., 203
 England, 199, 200, 201, 204, 209, 211,
 212, 213, 230, 240

Fairbanks House, 212
 Franklin, Conn., 229
 Franklin, Mass., 211

General Court, Mass., 209, 214, 215, 218
 Grace Church, Rye, N. Y., 230
 Grolier Club, N. Y., 235

Halgrave, Eng., 200
 Halifax, Nova Scotia, 229
 Hampton, Conn., 228, 229
 Hampton Hill, Conn., 229
 Hartford, Conn., 212, 213, 236, 240
 Harvard College, 228, 229
 Havidge, Eng., 203
 Highlands, N. Y., 227, 240
 Holden, Mass., 223
 Huntington, L. I., 227
 Hudson, N. Y., 232
 Hurst, Eng., 205
 Hyde Park, Mass., 211

Indians, 215
 Ireland, 204

Jersey City, N. J., 231, 240

King's Chapel Burial Ground, Mass., 216

King's College, N. Y., 229

Lakeville, Mass., 216

Lebanon, Conn., 197, 226

Land Records, 226

London, Eng., 200, 203, 230

Malden, Mass., 216, 217, 223

Mamaroneck, N. Y., 230

Marshfield, Mass., 224, 240

Marysville, Cal., 232

Massachusetts, 197, 198, 211

Medfield, Mass., 211

Metropolitan Museum of Art, N. Y., 234, 236

Middleboro, Mass., 216

Middletown, Conn., 218

Millis, Mass., 211

Natick, Mass., 211, 215, 226

N. Devon, Eng., 201

Needham, Mass., 211

Newark, N. J., 230

Newark, N. Y., 236

New Brunswick, N. J. Theological Seminary, 234

New England, 197, 198, 212, 214, 215, 220, 221

New Jersey, 230

New London, Conn., 231

Newton, Mass., 217, 223

New York, N. Y., 198, 231, 232, 233, 234, 236, 237, 240

Public Library, 235

Norfolk, Mass., 211

Norwalk, Conn., 198, 230, 240

Norwich, Conn., 227, 240

Norwood, Mass., 211

Pekin, China, 232

Philadelphia, Pa., 233, 234

Pilgrim, 225

Pilgrims, 209

Pill, Eng., 199, 201, 202, 240

Pleasantville, N. Y., 236

Plymouth Colony, Mass., 197

Mass., 197, 217

Rock, 209

Plympton, Mass., 226

Pocumtuck, 214

Pomfret, Conn., 197, 228

Presbyterian Church, Belleville, N. J., 234

Provincetown, Mass., 225

Puritans, 212

Pylle, Eng., 201, 202
House, 201

Reading, Mass., 228

Rehoboth, Mass., 217

Rye, N. Y., 197, 227, 230, 240

St. Andellion, Eng., 200

St. Louis, Mo., 236

Salem, Mass., 198, 228

San Francisco, Cal., 232

Santa Barbara, Cal., 232

Scotland, 204

Second River, N. J., 230

Shepton Mallet, Eng., 201

Ship "Mayflower," 224, 225

"Jeanette," 231

Somerset Co., Eng., 201, 202, 240

Stratford, Conn., 197, 230, 231, 240

Stratford, Eng., 200

Streatly, Eng., 203

Suffolk Co., Mass., 218, 220

Syracuse, N. Y., 232, 234

Taunton, Mass., 216

Teachers' College, N. Y., 235, 238

Tintaget, Eng., 200

Trewiggert, Eng., 200

Truro, Mass., 197, 223, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 240

Union Theological Seminary, 236

Walpole, Mass., 211

Warrenville, Conn., 197

Washington, D. C., 234

Elm, 212

Wellesley, Mass., 211

Westchester County, N. Y., 197, 227, 230

Westerly, R. I. Historical Society, 198

West Indies, 230

Westlake Society, 229

Westminster Abbey, 200

West Roxbury, Mass., 211

White Stone Hundred, Eng., 201

Whitley, Eng., 214

Williams College, 236

Windham, Conn., 229

County, Conn., 197, 229

Probate District, 226

Winterstoke Hundred, Eng., 240

Wokingham, Eng., 199, 204, 205, 240

Wrentham, Mass., 211, 219

Wynscote, Eng., 201

Yale College, 228, 230

ERRATA

- P. XV. Third line from bottom of the page: 1909 should read 1919.
- P. 236. In the paragraph 52. iii, relative to the children of Fanny Falconer¹² Avery, by her husband Manfred Philester Welcher, the text should read: They had four children (Welcher), 1 son and 3 daughters:
- iii. Kathryn Kolb (wife of Lester Groome¹² Welcher) was born June 29, 1897. She is a daughter of George and Anna (McDermott) Kolb.
 - iv. Avery Ogden¹² Welcher, should read: Amy Ogden¹² Welcher. This child was a daughter and not a son as indicated.

